

Thesis  
L45

Library  
U. S. Naval Postgraduate School  
Annapolis, Md.

ON THE EXISTENCE OF NOT NECESSARILY  
UNIQUE SOLUTIONS OF THE CLASSICAL HYPER-  
BOLIC BOUNDARY VALUE PROBLEMS FOR NON-  
LINEAR SECOND ORDER PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL  
EQUATIONS IN TWO INDEPENDENT VARIABLES.

By

Patrick Leehey

B.Sc., United States Naval Academy, 1942

Thesis

submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the  
Degree of Doctor of Philosophy in the Graduate Division  
of Applied Mathematics at Brown University  
May, 1960.





VITA

Patrick Leshey was born at Waterloo, Iowa, October 27, 1921. He attended the College of Engineering, State University of Iowa 1938-1939. Attended the U. S. Naval Academy 1939-1942, receiving the degree of Bachelor of Science in 1942. He was commissioned as Ensign, U. S. Navy, 1942. Served with the U. S. Pacific Fleet 1942-1945. Attended the U. S. Naval Postgraduate School in the course in Naval Engineering Design 1946-1947. Attended Brown University in the Graduate Division of Applied Mathematics 1947-1950. Member of Sigma Xi. He holds the rank of Lieutenant, U.S. Navy.

1. The first of these is the fact that the majority of the population of the United States is of European descent. This is a fact which has been recognized by the government and the people of the United States for many years. It is a fact which has been recognized by the government and the people of the United States for many years.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

<u>Chapter</u>		<u>Page</u>
	Notations	v
I	Introduction . . . . .	1
II	The Characteristic Initial Value Problem for	
	$u_{xy} = f(x,y; u; u_x, u_y)$ . . . . .	11
III	The Cauchy Problem for	
	$u_{xy} = f(x,y; u; u_x, u_y)$ . . . . .	36
IV	Existence Theorems for Canonical	
	Hyperbolic First Order Systems . . . . .	45
V	The Cauchy Problem for	
	$F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0$ . . . . .	54
VI	The Characteristic Initial Value Problem for	
	$F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0$ . . . . .	67
VII	The Mixed Boundary Value Problem for	
	$u_{xy} = f(x,y; u; u_x, u_y)$ . . . . .	88
VIII	Existence Theorems Based on the Concept of	
	Upper and Lower Bounding Functions. . . . .	107
	Bibliography . . . . .	117

1000 - 1000

1000

1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

## NOTATIONS

The following special notations will be used throughout this paper with the meanings as defined below. Other special notations used will be defined at the place where they are introduced.

$$R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq l \end{cases}$$

is a member of; i.e. belongs to.

$R$  is the set of all ordered pairs  $(x,y)$ , (points) for which  $0 \leq x \leq l$  and  $0 \leq y \leq l$ .

$$f \in C(B)$$

$f$  is a member of the class of functions continuous on the set  $B$ .

$$g \in C^1(H)$$

$g$  is a member of the class of functions continuously differentiable on the set  $H$ , (and similarly for higher degrees of differentiability.)

$$u_x$$

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}.$$

$$u_{\lambda, x}$$

$$\frac{\partial u_{\lambda}}{\partial x}.$$

$$\dot{x}$$

$$\frac{dx}{d\tau} \text{ where } \tau \text{ is a parameter along a path.}$$

$$x \in [0, l]$$

$x$  belongs to the closed interval,  $0 \leq x \leq l$ .

$$\Rightarrow$$

implies.

$$\Leftrightarrow$$

implies and is implied by; i.e. if and only if.

$$\{g_{\lambda}\}(x,y; u; p,q)$$

a sequence of functions  $g_{\lambda}$ , ( $\lambda = 1, 2, \dots$ ), of arguments  $(x,y; u; p,q)$ .

$$\{g_{\lambda}\} \rightarrow f \text{ on } B$$

the sequence  $\{g_{\lambda}\}$  converges pointwise on the set  $B$  to the function  $f$ .

40

1. 2. 3.

10

• • •

1000

$\{g_\lambda\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} f \text{ on } E$

the sequence  $\{g_\lambda\}$  converges uniformly on the set  $E$  to the function  $f$ .

$D_\pm y$

the right(+) and left (-) hand derivatives of the function  $y$  at the point in question.

1. The first part of the paper is devoted to the study of the properties of the function  $f(x)$  defined by the equation

$$f(x) = \frac{1}{2} (f(x-1) + f(x+1))$$

It is shown that the function  $f(x)$  is a linear function of  $x$ .

2. The second part of the paper is devoted to the study of the properties of the function  $g(x)$  defined by the equation

$$g(x) = \frac{1}{2} (g(x-1) + g(x+1))$$

It is shown that the function  $g(x)$  is a linear function of  $x$ .



## CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTION

The purpose of this paper is to present a number of existence theorems pertaining to a class of non-linear second order partial differential equations in two independent variables of the general form

$$(1.1) \quad F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0,$$

where

$$(1.2) \quad p = u_x, \quad q = u_y, \quad r = u_{xx}, \quad s = u_{xy} \text{ and } t = u_{yy},$$

in the usual notation. We restrict our attention to those prescriptions of initial conditions for which integral surfaces exist such that the equation is of hyperbolic type thereon, i.e. the inequality

$$(1.3) \quad F_s^2 - 4 F_r F_t > 0$$

must be satisfied on the integral surface in a neighborhood of the initial data.

E. PICARD [1],[7]<sup>1</sup>, E. COURSAT [8], E.E. Levi[9], H. LEWY[10], J. HADAMARD[11], M. CINQUINI-CIBRARIO[12],[13], and others have

---

<sup>1</sup> The number in the bracket [ ] refers to the reference in the bibliography.

# Summary

The purpose of this study was to determine the effect of the amount of food consumed on the rate of growth of the young of the Atlantic croaker, *Microstomus pomex*. The study was conducted in the laboratory of the U.S. Fish and Wildlife Service, Washington, D.C. The results of the study are presented in Table 1. The data show that the rate of growth of the young of the Atlantic croaker is directly proportional to the amount of food consumed. The rate of growth increases as the amount of food consumed increases, and decreases as the amount of food consumed decreases.

TABLE 1. Rate of growth of young Atlantic croaker, *Microstomus pomex*, as a function of the amount of food consumed.

g.m.

1.  $Y = 0.0001X^2 + 0.0002X + 0.0001$  (1)

2.  $Y = 0.0001X^2 + 0.0002X + 0.0001$  (2)

3.  $Y = 0.0001X^2 + 0.0002X + 0.0001$  (3)

4.  $Y = 0.0001X^2 + 0.0002X + 0.0001$  (4)

5.

developed existence theorems based on the method of successive approximations. Their concern has been to establish sufficient conditions for the existence of a unique solution. Retaining their restrictions on the initial data, we shall obtain sufficient conditions for the existence of at least one solution. The integrals of the equations we consider will not, in general, be unique.

The concept of characteristic curves in an integral surface plays an important role in all work in this field. We give two definitions of a characteristic curve, the first applicable when the curve is expressed in non-parametric form, the second when expressed in parametric form:

#### Definition 1

$$\gamma: \begin{cases} a \leq x \leq b \\ y = g(x) \end{cases} \quad \text{where } g \in C'([a,b]), \text{ or } \gamma: \begin{cases} x = h(y) \\ c \leq y \leq d \end{cases}$$

where  $h \in C'([c,d])$ , is a characteristic base curve (characteristic projection or, by usage, characteristic) for a particular integral surface  $J: u = u(x,y)$  of  $F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0 \iff$  for each  $(x,y)$

$$(1.4) \quad F_r dy^2 - F_s dydx + F_t dx^2 = 0$$

#### Definition 1a

$$\gamma: \begin{cases} x=x(\tau) \\ y=y(\tau) \end{cases} \quad \text{for } \tau \in [0,1] \text{ and where } x,y \in C'([0,1]), \text{ is a}$$

characteristic base curve for a particular integral surface

$J: u = u(x,y)$  of  $F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0 \iff$  for each  $\tau \in [0,1]$

$$(1.5) \quad \begin{cases} 1) & F_r \dot{y}^2 - F_s \dot{y}\dot{x} + F_t \dot{x}^2 = 0 \\ 2) & \dot{x}^2 + \dot{y}^2 \neq 0. \end{cases}$$

1941-1942

1941-1942

1941-1942

1941-1942

1941-1942

1941-1942

1941-1942

1941-1942

1941-1942

1941-1942

1941-1942

1941-1942

1941-1942

Under either definition  $\gamma$  is rectifiable and possesses a continuously turning tangent (see C. JORDAN[6], p. 100). The two definitions are equivalent in the following sense: We may convert  $\gamma$  expressed in non-parametric form into its parametric expression by setting  $x = \tau$ ,  $y = g(\tau)$ , or  $x = h(\tau)$ ,  $y = \tau$  as the case may be. That the converse is possible follows directly from condition 2) of Definition 1a and the Implicit Function Theorem. For, suppose at a point  $(x(\tau_0), y(\tau_0))$  of  $\gamma$  that  $\dot{x} \neq 0$ . Then in a vicinity of  $x_0 = x(\tau_0)$  the inverse relation  $\tau = \tau(x)$  exists and we may write

$$(1.6) \quad \gamma : y = y(\tau(x)) = g(x).$$

Similarly, where  $\dot{y} \neq 0$ , we may write

$$(1.7) \quad \gamma : x = x(\tau(y)) = h(y).$$

By condition 2), one of the two representations (1.6) or (1.7) is always possible in the vicinity of each point of  $\gamma$ .

### Definition 2

$$\Gamma : \begin{cases} x = x(\tau) \\ y = y(\tau) \\ u = u(\tau) \end{cases} \text{ for } \tau \in [0,1] \text{ and where } x, y, u \in C^1([0,1]),$$

a space curve lying in a particular integral surface  $J: u=u(x,y)$  of  $F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0$ , is called a characteristic curve in the integral surface  $J \iff$  the projection of  $\Gamma$  onto the  $xy$  plane is a characteristic projection for the integral surface  $J$ .

The following is a list of the names of the persons who have been appointed to the various positions in the Department of the Interior, under the act of March 3, 1879, entitled "An Act to provide for the better management of the public lands, and for other purposes."

Under suitable hypotheses, by virtue of the hyperbolic condition (1.3), for any integral surface  $J: u=u(x,y)$  of  $F(x,y,u;p,q,r,s,t) = 0$ , equations (1.4) or (1.5) determine two one parameter families of characteristic curves lying in the integral surface  $J$ . Exactly one characteristic curve from each family passes through any given point  $(x_0, y_0, u(x_0, y_0))$  of the integral surface  $J$ ; and, moreover, the corresponding two characteristic base curves do not have a common tangent at  $(x_0, y_0)$ .

Along any curve, characteristic or otherwise, lying in the integral surface  $J$ , the following strip, or band, conditions

$$(1.8) \quad \dot{u} = p\dot{x} + q\dot{y}$$

$$(1.9) \quad \begin{cases} \dot{p} = r\dot{x} + s\dot{y} \\ \dot{q} = s\dot{x} + t\dot{y} \end{cases}$$

must be satisfied.

The modification of Definition 2 and conditions (1.8), (1.9) when the curve  $\Gamma$  is expressed in non-parametric form is obvious.

### Definition 3

$$S^1: \begin{cases} x=x(\tau) \\ y=y(\tau) \\ u=u(\tau) \\ p=p(\tau) \\ q=q(\tau) \end{cases} \text{ for } \tau \in [0,1] \text{ and where } x,y,u,p,q \in C'([0,1]).$$

is called a first order strip  $\Longleftrightarrow$  for each  $\tau \in [0,1]$

$$(1.8) \quad \dot{u} = p\dot{x} + q\dot{y}$$

Suppose a particular integral surface  $J: u=u(x,y)$  of

...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...

...

...

...

...

...

...



$F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0$  has a contact of first order with the strip  $S^1$ . Then if  $\Gamma : \begin{cases} x=x(\tau) \\ y=y(\tau) \\ u=u(\tau) \end{cases}$  for  $\tau \in [0,1]$  is a characteristic curve in the integral surface  $J$ , the strip  $S^1$  is called a characteristic first order strip for the integral surface  $J$ .

Definition 4

$$S^2 : \begin{cases} x=x(\tau) \\ y=y(\tau) \\ u=u(\tau) \\ p=p(\tau) \\ q=q(\tau) \\ r=r(\tau) \\ s=s(\tau) \\ t=t(\tau) \end{cases} \quad \text{for } \tau \in [0,1] \text{ and where } x,y,u,p,q,r,s,t \in C^1([0,1])$$

is called a second order strip  $\iff$  for each  $\tau \in [0,1]$

$$(1.8) \quad \dot{u} = p\dot{x} + q\dot{y}$$

$$(1.9) \quad \begin{cases} \dot{p} = r\dot{x} + s\dot{y} \\ \dot{q} = s\dot{x} + t\dot{y} \end{cases}$$

If, moreover, equation (1.1) and conditions (1.3) and (1.5) are satisfied for each  $\tau \in [0,1]$ , then  $S^1$  is called a characteristic second order strip.

Note in Definition 4 that since all the arguments of the functions involved in conditions (1.5) are known upon prescription of the strip  $S^2$ , we may determine whether or not the projection of corresponding space curve  $\Gamma : \begin{cases} x=x(\tau) \\ y=y(\tau) \\ u=u(\tau) \end{cases}$  for  $\tau \in [0,1]$  is a characteristic projection without reference to any particular integral surface.

The following table shows the results of the experiment. The first column shows the number of trials, the second column shows the number of correct responses, and the third column shows the percentage of correct responses.

Number of trials	Number of correct responses	Percentage of correct responses
10	8	80%
20	15	75%
30	22	73%
40	28	70%
50	35	70%

The results show that the percentage of correct responses decreases as the number of trials increases. This suggests that the subject is becoming more confident in their responses as they practice.

The following table shows the results of the experiment. The first column shows the number of trials, the second column shows the number of correct responses, and the third column shows the percentage of correct responses.

10
20
30
40
50
60
70
80
90
100

The following table shows the results of the experiment. The first column shows the number of trials, the second column shows the number of correct responses, and the third column shows the percentage of correct responses.

10  
20

The following table shows the results of the experiment. The first column shows the number of trials, the second column shows the number of correct responses, and the third column shows the percentage of correct responses.

Definitions 3 and 4 can be readily modified to deal with the non-parametric case. See, for example, M. CINQUINI-CIARRIO[13].

In Chapter 2 we consider the characteristic initial value problem for the equation

$$(1.10) \quad s = f(x, y; u; p, q)$$

and its extension to the system of equations

$$(1.11) \quad s_i = f_i(x, y; u_1, \dots, u_n; p_1, \dots, p_n, q_1, \dots, q_n) \\ (i=1, 2, \dots, n).$$

We modify the customary hypothesis that  $f$  be Lipschitzian, i.e. with respect to variables  $u$ ,  $p$  and  $q$ , to require that  $f$  be partially Lipschitzian, i.e. with respect to variables  $p$  and  $q$  only. We obtain existence of an integral  $u$  over the same closed domain as that obtained in the classical theory. Our integral, however, cannot be shown to be unique. This fact is demonstrated by an example. By further example, we show that the bounds obtained on the domain of existence are maximal bounds.

In Chapter 3 we apply the methods of Chapter 2 to the Cauchy problem for equation (1.10) and the extension to the system (1.11). The conclusions are similar to those obtained in Chapter 2.

The arguments in Chapter 4 serve to establish the equivalence (as defined therein) between the characteristic initial value and the Cauchy problems for the system (1.11) and the corresponding problems for a particular system of first order partial differential equations of the form

The first of these is the fact that the number of people who are

able to read and write is increasing rapidly.

This is due to the fact that the government has been

able to provide more schools and teachers.

As a result of this

the number of people who

are able to read and write

is increasing rapidly.

This is due to the fact that the government has been

able to provide more schools and teachers.

As a result of this

the number of people who are able to read and write

is increasing rapidly.

This is due to the fact that the government has been

able to provide more schools and teachers.

As a result of this

the number of people who are able to read and write

is increasing rapidly.

As a result of this

the number of people who

$$(1.12) \quad \begin{cases} \sum_{k=1}^n A_{ik} u_k, x = C_i & (i = 1, 2, \dots, m < n) \\ \sum_{k=1}^n A_{ik} u_k, y = C_i & (i = m+1, m+2, \dots, n) \end{cases}$$

where the  $A_{ik}, C_i$  are functions of  $x, y, u_1, u_2, \dots, u_n$ . The system (1.12) is termed a canonical hyperbolic system.

This equivalence has already been established by M. CINQUINI-CIBRARIO[12]. Under the restriction that the first partial derivatives of the functions  $A_{ik}, C_i$  be Lipschitzian with respect to all their arguments, she obtains her theorems on the existence and uniqueness of the system of functions  $U_i$  as the solution for the canonical hyperbolic system (1.12). We demonstrate that her reasoning establishing the equivalence does not depend upon the uniqueness of the solutions for either system (1.11) or system (1.12). Consequently, from our results in Chapters 2 and 3, we are able to remove the above Lipschitz condition entirely and obtain existence, but not uniqueness, for the solutions of the canonical hyperbolic system for both characteristic and Cauchy initial value prescriptions.

Following the attack of H. LEWY[10], in Chapter 5 we reduce the equation

$$(1.1) \quad F(x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t) = 0$$

to a system of so-called characteristic equations by means of a transformation to the characteristic base curves as coordinates. This system is shown to contain a canonical hyperbolic system.

$$(1.12) \quad \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \sum_{k=1}^N (K_k x_k) = 1 \\ \sum_{k=1}^N (K_k x_k) = 0 \end{array} \right.$$

where the  $K_k$  are the  $N \times N$  matrices,  $x_k$  are the  $N \times 1$  vectors, and  $1$  is the  $N \times 1$  vector of ones.

The matrices  $K_k$  are symmetric and positive definite. The vectors  $x_k$  are the eigenvectors of the matrices  $K_k$  corresponding to the eigenvalue  $1$ .

The matrices  $K_k$  are the  $N \times N$  matrices,  $x_k$  are the  $N \times 1$  vectors, and  $1$  is the  $N \times 1$  vector of ones.

The matrices  $K_k$  are the  $N \times N$  matrices,  $x_k$  are the  $N \times 1$  vectors, and  $1$  is the  $N \times 1$  vector of ones.

The matrices  $K_k$  are the  $N \times N$  matrices,  $x_k$  are the  $N \times 1$  vectors, and  $1$  is the  $N \times 1$  vector of ones.

The matrices  $K_k$  are the  $N \times N$  matrices,  $x_k$  are the  $N \times 1$  vectors, and  $1$  is the  $N \times 1$  vector of ones.

We treat the Cauchy problem, i.e. to find an integral surface which has a second order contact with a prescribed second order strip. By virtue of a theorem by M. CINQUINI-CIBRARIO, stated in Chapter 4, LEWY'S work yields immediately the result that for  $F \in C'''$  in a suitable region, there exists a unique solution  $u \in C'''$  in a sufficiently small neighborhood of the initial curve. We again demonstrate that the equivalence of the problems is not dependent upon uniqueness of their respective solutions; and, hence, by requiring simply that  $F \in C''$  we obtain existence but not uniqueness.

In Chapter 6 we treat the characteristic initial value problem for equation (1.1). We follow a modification of H. LEWY'S method introduced by M. CINQUINI-CIBRARIO[13]. Here equation (1.1) is first transformed into the form

$$(1.13) \quad s = f(x, y; u; p, q; r, t).$$

A modified system of characteristic equations is obtained. This system also contains a canonical hyperbolic system. The theorems of Chapter 2 apply and we obtain results similar to those obtained in Chapter 5 for the Cauchy problem.

In Chapter 7 we treat the mixed boundary value problem for the equation

$$(1.10) \quad s = f(x, y; u; p, q),$$

i.e. the problem where any integral surface of (1.10) is required to pass through two space curves issuing from a point, with one of the curves being a characteristic on this surface and the other





curve having nowhere a characteristic projection. We show that for equation (1.10) there is no loss in generality if we assume the initial data to be

$$(1.14) \quad u(x, 0) = u(x, x) = 0.$$

For  $f$  continuous, bounded and Lipschitzian, we prove that there exists one and only one integral surface of (1.10) satisfying (1.14) on a domain for which we prescribe explicit bounds. For  $f$  continuous, bounded and partially Lipschitzian, we find, by arguments analogous to those used in Chapters 2 and 3, that there exists at least one integral surface of (1.10) satisfying (1.14) on a domain for which we again prescribe the same type of explicit bounds.

In Chapter 8 we consider the characteristic initial value problem for equation (1.10) from a new point of view. Here, in order to extend the theorems of Chapter 2, we introduce the concept of upper and lower bounding functions for the solution (or solutions) of the problem. This idea was first used by O. PERRON [18] to obtain an existence proof for the problem

$$(1.15) \quad y' = f(x, y) \quad , \quad y(x_0) = y_0.$$

His proof is quite independent of the classical proofs.

H. MÜLLER [4] shows that PERRON's method has no direct analogue for a system

$$(1.16) \quad y'_i = f_i(x, y_1, \dots, y_n) \quad , \quad (i = 1, \dots, n).$$

He is able, however, to extend the classical theorem for a system (1.16) to obtain a theorem which reduces to the direct analogue to the PERRON theorem in the case where the  $f_i$  are monotonically increasing functions of the arguments  $y_1, \dots, y_n$ .

AT THE COURT OF THE LORDS OF THE MANOR OF

WIMBORNE, IN THE COUNTY OF DORSET, THIS 10TH DAY OF

MAY, 1881, THE FOLLOWING DEEDS WERE

PRODUCED AND WERE READ AND

WAS THEREON MADE VERIFICATION

OF THE SAME BY THE SIGNED

DEEDS BEING THE SAME AS

THOSE WHICH WERE

PRODUCED AND WERE

READ AND WERE THEREON

MADE VERIFICATION

The extensions to the theorems of Chapter 2 which we obtain are similar to MÜLLER's conclusions for the system (1.16). Moreover, we demonstrate by example that the PERRON method has no direct analogue for the characteristic initial value problem for equation (1.16). We also give an example illustrating the theorems obtained in this chapter. Finally, we note that the Cauchy problem for equation (1.10) and the Cauchy and characteristic initial value problems for the system

$$(1.11) \quad \begin{aligned} \dot{u}_i &= f_i(x, y; u_1, \dots, u_n; p_1, \dots, p_n; q_1, \dots, q_n) \\ (i &= 1, \dots, n), \end{aligned}$$

may also be treated by the methods of this chapter.

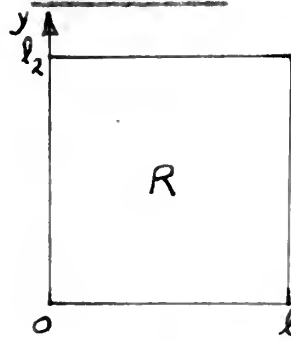


## CHAPTER II

The Characteristic Initial Value Problem for  $u_{xy} = f(x, y; u; u_x, u_y)$ .

For convenience of reference we first state the following theorem, whose proof is based on the method of successive approximations. The proof of existence was given by É. PICARD [1], while the proof of uniqueness may be found in E. KAMKE [2] p. 410.

Theorem 1.



$$1) \quad f(x, y; u; p, q) \in C(B), B: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \\ -a \leq u \leq a \\ -b_1 \leq p \leq b_1 \\ -b_2 \leq q \leq b_2 \end{cases}$$

2)  $f$  is Lipschitzian on  $B$ ; i.e. there exists a positive constant  $K$  such that for

$$(x, y; u_1; p_1, q_1) \in B, (x, y; u_2; p_2, q_2) \in B,$$

$$|f(x, y; u_1; p_1, q_1) - f(x, y; u_2; p_2, q_2)| \leq K \{ |u_1 - u_2| + |p_1 - p_2| + |q_1 - q_2| \}$$

3)  $M l_1 l_2 \leq a$ ,  $M l_1 \leq b_2$ ,  $M l_2 \leq b_1$ , where  $M = \max |f|$  on  $B$ .

$\Rightarrow$  4) There exists one and only one function  $u(x, y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{xy}(x, y) \in C(R)$ , where  $R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$ , such that for each  $(x, y) \in R$  the point  $(x, y; u(x, y); u_x(x, y), u_y(x, y)) \in B$ , and  $u_{xy}(x, y) = f(x, y; u(x, y); u_x(x, y), u_y(x, y))$ ,  $u(x, 0) = 0$ ,  $u(0, y) = 0$  for each  $(x, y) \in R$ .



Remarks. a) Suppose we prescribe  $u(x,0) = U(x)$ ,  $u(0,y) = V(y)$  where  $U(x) \in C^1([0, l_1])$ ,  $V(y) \in C^1([0, l_2])$  and  $U(0) = V(0)$ . Consider the function  $w(x,y) = U(x) + V(y) - U(0)$ . Clearly,  $w_{xy}(x,y) = 0$  and  $w(x,0) = U(x)$ ,  $w(0,y) = V(y)$  hence the function  $v = u - w$  must satisfy  $v_{xy} = f(x,y; v + w; v_x + w_x, v_y + w_y)$ ,  $v(x,0) = v(0,y) = 0$ , a problem of the type covered by Theorem 1.

b) Suppose  $f \in C$ , bounded and Lipschitzian in the domain  $B'$  :

$$\begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \\ -\infty < u < \infty \\ -\infty < p < \infty \\ -\infty < q < \infty \end{cases}$$

Then hypothesis 3) is immediately satisfied.

Following an approach used by M. MÜLLER [3] p. 632, in dealing with a system of first order ordinary differential equations, we are led to this improvement of the above theorem:

Theorem 1a. 1)

2)'  $f$  is partially Lipschitzian on  $B$ ; i.e. there exists a positive constant  $K$  such that for  $(x,y; u; p_1, q_1) \in B$ ,

$$(x,y; u; p_2, q_2) \in B, \quad |f(x,y; u; p_1, q_1) - f(x,y; u; p_2, q_2)| \leq K \{ |p_1 - p_2| + |q_1 - q_2| \}.$$

3)

$\Rightarrow$  4)' There exists at least one function  $u(x,y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{xy}(x,y) \in C(R)$ , where  $B: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$  such that for each  $(x,y) \in R$

... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..

... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..

... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..

... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..



the point  $(x, y; u(x, y); u_x(x, y), u_y(x, y)) \in B$ , and  $u_{xy}(x, y) = f(x, y; u(x, y); u_x(x, y), u_y(x, y))$ ,  $u(x, 0) = 0$ ,  $u(0, y) = 0$  for each  $(x, y) \in B$ .

Proof. According to WEIERSTRASS' celebrated theorem [4] p. 1147, on polynomial approximations to a continuous function, there exists a sequence of polynomials,  $\{g_\lambda\}(x, y; u; p, q)$ , converging uniformly to  $f(x, y; u; p, q)$  on  $B$ . We designate this uniform convergence by the notation  $\{g_\lambda\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} f$  on  $B$ .

We extend  $f$  and the polynomials  $g_\lambda$ ,  $(\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$ , over the domain  $B$  to the domain  $B'$ , defined in the remark b) above, by the definition

$$f(x, y; u; p, q) = f(x, y; \bar{u}; \bar{p}, \bar{q})$$

$$g_\lambda(x, y; u; p, q) = g_\lambda(x, y; \bar{u}; \bar{p}, \bar{q}), \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots),$$

(2.1) where

$$\begin{aligned} \bar{u} &= u \text{ if } -a \leq u \leq a, & \bar{p} &= p \text{ if } -b_1 \leq p \leq b_1, & \bar{q} &= q \text{ if } -b_2 \leq q \leq b_2. \\ \bar{u} &= a \text{ if } a < u & \bar{p} &= b_1 \text{ if } b_1 < p & \bar{q} &= b_2 \text{ if } b_2 < q \\ \bar{u} &= -a \text{ if } u < -a & \bar{p} &= -b_1 \text{ if } p < -b_1 & \bar{q} &= -b_2 \text{ if } q < -b_2 \end{aligned}$$

From this extended definition we see that  $|f| \leq M$  in  $B'$ . Since  $\{g_\lambda\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} f$  in  $B'$ , there exists a constant  $L > 0$  such that  $|g_\lambda| \leq L$  in  $B'$  and for all  $\lambda$ . The functions  $g_\lambda$ ,  $(\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$  are uniformly continuous in  $B'$ , moreover they possess bounded difference quotients with respect to the arguments  $u$ ,  $p$  and  $q$  everywhere in  $B'$ . Hence in  $B'$ , for each function  $g_\lambda$  there exists a constant  $K_\lambda > 0$  such that



$$(2.2) \quad |g_\lambda(x, y; u_1; p_1, q_1) - g_\lambda(x, y; u_2; p_2, q_2)| \leq K_\lambda \{ |u_1 - u_2| + |p_1 - p_2| + |q_1 - q_2| \}.$$

Thus, by Theorem 1, to each  $g_\lambda$  there corresponds one and only one function  $u_\lambda(x, y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{\lambda, xy}(x, y) \in C(R)$  satisfying

$$(2.3) \quad \begin{cases} u_{\lambda, xy} = g_\lambda(x, y; u_\lambda(x, y); u_{\lambda, x}(x, y), u_{\lambda, y}(x, y)), \\ u_\lambda(x, 0) = 0, \quad u_\lambda(0, y) = 0 \quad \text{for each } (x, y) \in R. \end{cases}$$

We may express the characteristic initial value problem for each  $u_\lambda$  in the form of an equivalent integral equation

$$(2.4) \quad u_\lambda(x, y) = \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y g_\lambda(\xi, \eta; u_\lambda(\xi, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(\xi, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, \eta)) d\eta.$$

By differentiation,

$$(2.5) \quad u_{\lambda, x}(x, y) = \int_0^y g_\lambda(x, \eta; u_\lambda(x, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x, \eta)) d\eta$$

$$(2.6) \quad u_{\lambda, y}(x, y) = \int_0^x g_\lambda(\xi, y; u_\lambda(\xi, y); u_{\lambda, x}(\xi, y), u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, y)) d\xi.$$

We now show that the sequences  $\{u_\lambda\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda, x}\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda, y}\}$  are each uniformly bounded and equicontinuous on  $R$ . For the sequence  $\{u_\lambda\}$  this follows directly from the integral expression (2.4), for, given  $x, x_1, x_2 \in [0, l_1]$  and  $y, y_1, y_2 \in [0, l_2]$ ,

$$(2.7) \quad |u_\lambda(x, y)| \leq L l_1 l_2, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$$

$$(2.8) \quad |u_\lambda(x_1, y_1) - u_\lambda(x_2, y_2)| \leq L |x_1 - x_2| |y_1 - y_2| + L l_2 |x_1 - x_2| + L l_1 |y_1 - y_2|, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$$

$$f(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{f^{(k)}(a)}{k!} (x-a)^k = \left( \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{f^{(k)}(a)}{k!} (x-a)^k \right) \cdot 1 = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{f^{(k)}(a)}{k!} (x-a)^k$$

Let  $f(x) = e^x$ . Then  $f^{(k)}(a) = e^a$  for all  $k$ . So

$$e^x = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{e^a}{k!} (x-a)^k = e^a \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{(x-a)^k}{k!} = e^a e^{x-a} = e^x$$

Let  $f(x) = \sin x$ . Then  $f^{(k)}(a) = \sin(a + k\pi/2)$ . So

$$\sin x = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{\sin(a + k\pi/2)}{k!} (x-a)^k$$

Let  $a = 0$ . Then  $f^{(k)}(0) = \sin(k\pi/2)$ . So

$$\sin x = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{\sin(k\pi/2)}{k!} x^k$$

The uniform boundedness of  $\{u_{\lambda,x}\}$  and of  $\{u_{\lambda,y}\}$  follow directly from (2.5) and (2.6), respectively, for, given  $(x,y) \in R$ ,

$$(2.9) \quad |u_{\lambda,x}(x,y)| \leq L f_2, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$$

$$(2.10) \quad |u_{\lambda,y}(x,y)| \leq L f_1, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots).$$

We base the proof of the equicontinuity of the functions of the sequence  $\{u_{\lambda,x}\}$  upon the following two lemmas, the first of which is due to T. H. GRONWALL [5].

Lemma 1. 1)  $z(y) \in C([0, l])$

$$(2.11) \quad 2) \quad 0 \leq z(y) \leq \int_0^y (Mz(\eta) + A) d\eta + B \quad \text{for } y \in [0, l]$$

where  $M$ ,  $A$  and  $B$  are constants  $\geq 0$ .

$$(2.12) \quad 3) \quad 0 \leq z(y) \leq (Al + B) e^{My} \quad \text{for } y \in [0, l].$$

Lemma 2. Given  $\mu > 0$ ,  $\zeta > 0$ , there exist  $\delta$ , a positive constant depending upon  $\mu$  alone, and  $N$ , a positive integer depending upon  $\zeta$  alone, such that whenever  $(x_1, y) \in R$ ,  $(x_2, y) \in R$ ,  $|x_1 - x_2| < \delta$  and  $\lambda > N$ ,

$$(2.13) \quad |u_{\lambda,x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda,x}(x_1, y)| \leq K \int_0^y |u_{\lambda,x}(x_2, \eta) - u_{\lambda,x}(x_1, \eta)| d\eta + \mu + \zeta$$

where  $K$  is the partial Lipschitz constant for  $f(x, y; u; p, q)$ .

Assume, for the moment, the validity of these two lemmas. Each of the functions  $u_{\lambda,x}$  is certainly uniformly continuous on  $R$ ; hence, if we let  $Z(y) = |u_{\lambda,x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda,x}(x_1, y)|$  for any particular  $\lambda > N$ ,

The system described in the preceding section is a simple one, but it is not sufficient for the purpose of the present investigation. It is necessary to consider the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(1) The first factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(2) The second factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(3) The third factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(4) The fourth factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(5) The fifth factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(6) The sixth factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(7) The seventh factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(8) The eighth factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(9) The ninth factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(10) The tenth factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(11) The eleventh factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(12) The twelfth factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(13) The thirteenth factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(14) The fourteenth factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

(15) The fifteenth factor to be considered is the effect of the various factors which enter into the problem, and to show that the system is capable of dealing with them.

we have immediately that for  $|x_2 - x_1| < \delta$ ,

$$(2.14) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y)| \leq (\mu + \zeta) e^{K/2}.$$

Suppose  $(x_1, y_1) \in R$ ,  $(x_2, y_2) \in R$ , then certainly  $(x_2, y_1) \in R$  and

$$(2.15) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y_1)| \leq |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_1)| + |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_1) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y_1)|, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots).$$

By (2.5) we have that

$$(2.16) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_1)| \leq L |y_2 - y_1|, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots).$$

Inequalities (2.14), (2.15) and (2.16) yield immediately the equicontinuity on  $R$  of the functions of the sequence  $\{u_{\lambda, x}\}$ ; for, given  $\epsilon > 0$ , we first choose  $\mu > 0$  and  $\zeta > 0$  such that

$$(2.17) \quad \mu + \zeta < \frac{\epsilon}{2e^{K/2}}$$

and let  $\delta$  and  $N$  be the corresponding constants given by Lemma 2.

By the uniform continuity on  $R$  of each of the functions  $u_{\lambda, x}$ , there exists a positive constant  $\delta_N$ , depending on  $\epsilon$  alone, such that

$$|x_1 - x_2| < \delta_N \text{ and } |y_1 - y_2| < \delta_N \Rightarrow$$

$$(2.18) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y_1)| < \epsilon, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots, N).$$

Setting  $\delta_0 = \min(\delta, \delta_N, \frac{\epsilon}{2L})$  we obtain





$$|x_1 - x_2| < \delta_0 \quad \text{and} \quad |y_1 - y_2| < \delta_0 \Rightarrow$$

$$(2.19) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y_1)| < \epsilon, \quad \text{for } \lambda = 1, 2, \dots, N, N+1, \dots$$

Proof of Lemma 1: Let  $Z(y) = e^{My} \cdot w(y)$ , without loss for we may always choose  $w(y) = e^{-My} \cdot Z(y)$ .  $w(y) \in C([0, l])$  and hence attains a maximum thereon. Let  $w_{\max}$  occur at  $y = y_1$ , then

$$\begin{aligned} 0 &\leq e^{My_1} w_{\max} \leq \int_0^{y_1} (M e^{M\eta} w(\eta) + A) d\eta + B \\ &\leq w_{\max} \int_0^{y_1} M e^{M\eta} d\eta + A y_1 + B \\ &= w_{\max} (e^{My_1} - 1) + A y_1 + B \end{aligned}$$

Thus  $0 \leq w_{\max} \leq A y_1 + B \leq Al + B$  and hence

$$0 \leq Z(y) \leq (Al + B) e^{My} \quad \text{for } y \in [0, l].$$

Proof of Lemma 2:

$$\begin{aligned} (2.20) \quad u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y) &= \int_0^y [\varepsilon_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta; u_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta); \\ &\quad u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) \\ &\quad - \varepsilon_{\lambda}(x_1, \eta; u_{\lambda}(x_1, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), \\ &\quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta))] d\eta \\ &= \int_0^y [\varepsilon_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta; u_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta), \\ &\quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) \\ &\quad - \varepsilon_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta; u_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta), \\ &\quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta))] d\eta \\ &\quad + \int_0^y [\varepsilon_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta; u_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta), \\ &\quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) \end{aligned}$$

$$x = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{1-\beta^2}} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{1-\beta'^2}} \right) \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{1-\beta^2}} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{1-\beta'^2}} \right)$$

Let us now look at the transformation of the coordinates  $(x, y, z, t)$  to  $(x', y', z', t')$

For the transformation of the coordinates  $(x, y, z, t)$  to  $(x', y', z', t')$  we use the Lorentz transformation. The transformation of the coordinates  $(x, y, z, t)$  to  $(x', y', z', t')$  is given by the following equations:

$$x' = \gamma (x - \beta ct) \quad y' = y \quad z' = z \quad t' = \gamma \left( t - \frac{\beta x}{c} \right)$$

$$\gamma = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1-\beta^2}} \quad \beta = \frac{v}{c}$$

where  $\gamma$  is the Lorentz factor and  $\beta$  is the velocity  $v$  in units of the speed of light  $c$ .

The transformation of the coordinates  $(x, y, z, t)$  to  $(x', y', z', t')$  is given by the following equations:

For the transformation of the coordinates  $(x, y, z, t)$  to  $(x', y', z', t')$  we use the Lorentz transformation.

$$x' = \gamma (x - \beta ct) \quad y' = y \quad z' = z \quad t' = \gamma \left( t - \frac{\beta x}{c} \right)$$

where  $\gamma$  is the Lorentz factor and  $\beta$  is the velocity  $v$  in units of the speed of light  $c$ .

The transformation of the coordinates  $(x, y, z, t)$  to  $(x', y', z', t')$  is given by the following equations:

$$x' = \gamma (x - \beta ct) \quad y' = y \quad z' = z \quad t' = \gamma \left( t - \frac{\beta x}{c} \right)$$

where  $\gamma$  is the Lorentz factor and  $\beta$  is the velocity  $v$  in units of the speed of light  $c$ .

The transformation of the coordinates  $(x, y, z, t)$  to  $(x', y', z', t')$  is given by the following equations:

$$x' = \gamma (x - \beta ct) \quad y' = y \quad z' = z \quad t' = \gamma \left( t - \frac{\beta x}{c} \right)$$

where  $\gamma$  is the Lorentz factor and  $\beta$  is the velocity  $v$  in units of the speed of light  $c$ .

(2.20)  
(Continued)

$$\begin{aligned}
 & - f(x_2, \eta; u_\lambda(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), \\
 & \quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) ] d\eta \\
 & + \int_0^y [f(x_2, \eta; u_\lambda(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), \\
 & \quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) \\
 & - f(x_1, \eta; u_\lambda(x_1, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), \\
 & \quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta))] d\eta \\
 & + \int_0^y [f(x_1, \eta; u_\lambda(x_1, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), \\
 & \quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta)) \\
 & - \varepsilon_\lambda(x_1, \eta; u_\lambda(x_1, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), \\
 & \quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta))] d\eta \\
 & \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots).
 \end{aligned}$$

Since  $\{\varepsilon_\lambda\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} f$  on  $E'$ , given  $\zeta > 0$ , there exists a positive integer  $N$ , depending upon  $\zeta$  alone, such that for  $\lambda > N$ ,

$$\begin{aligned}
 (2.21) \quad & \left| \int_0^y [\varepsilon_\lambda(x_2, \eta; u_\lambda(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) - \right. \\
 & \quad \left. f(x_2, \eta; u_\lambda(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta))] d\eta \right| \\
 & + \left| \int_0^y [f(x_1, \eta; u_\lambda(x_1, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta)) - \right. \\
 & \quad \left. \varepsilon_\lambda(x_1, \eta; u_\lambda(x_1, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta))] d\eta \right| < \zeta
 \end{aligned}$$

By hypothesis 2)',

$$(2.22) \quad \left| \int_0^y [f(x_2, \eta; u_\lambda(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) - \right.$$

$\frac{d}{dt} \left( \frac{1}{r^2} \right) = -\frac{2}{r^3} \frac{dr}{dt}$

*[Faint handwritten notes at the bottom of the page]*

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

$$\begin{aligned}
 (2.22) \quad & \left| \int_0^{\gamma} \left[ f(x_2, \eta; u_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) \right] d\eta \right| \\
 & \leq K \int_0^{\gamma} |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta)| d\eta, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)
 \end{aligned}$$

Since  $f$  is uniformly continuous on  $E'$ , the functions of the sequence  $\{u_{\lambda}\}$  are equicontinuous on  $R$ , and  $|u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta) - u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta)| \leq L |x_2 - x_1|$ ,  $(\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$ , it follows that given  $\mu > 0$  there exists a positive constant  $\delta$ , depending upon  $\mu$  alone, such that for  $|x_2 - x_1| < \delta$ ,

$$\begin{aligned}
 (2.23) \quad & \left| \int_0^{\gamma} \left[ f(x_2, \eta; u_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) \right. \right. \\
 & \left. \left. - f(x_1, \eta; u_{\lambda}(x_1, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta)) \right] d\eta \right| < \mu, \\
 & (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots).
 \end{aligned}$$

Therefore, from (2.21), (2.22) and (2.23), by virtue of (2.20) we obtain that for  $\lambda > N$  and  $|x_2 - x_1| < \delta$ ,

$$\begin{aligned}
 (2.13) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y)| & < K \int_0^{\gamma} |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta)| d\eta \\
 & + \mu + \zeta
 \end{aligned}$$

thus verifying Lemma 2.

The proof of the equicontinuity of the functions of the sequence  $\{u_{\lambda, y}\}$  follows precisely the same steps as that for the sequence  $\{u_{\lambda, x}\}$ .

We now invoke the well-known theorem of C. ARZELA [3] p. 1144:

"Given a set  $F$  of functions  $f$  defined and continuous on the closed bounded set  $A$ , then the necessary and sufficient conditions that each sequence of functions contained in  $F$  possesses

(20.2)  $\| \varphi \|_{\infty} = \sup_{x \in X} \| \varphi(x) \|_Y = \sup_{x \in X} \sum_{i=1}^n | \varphi_i(x) |$  (definition)

$$\| \varphi \|_{\infty} = A \iff \forall x \in X, \sum_{i=1}^n | \varphi_i(x) | \leq A \text{ and } \exists x \in X \text{ such that } \sum_{i=1}^n | \varphi_i(x) | = A$$

Let  $\varphi = (\varphi_1, \dots, \varphi_n) \in X^*$ . We want to show that  $\| \varphi \|_{\infty} = \max_{1 \leq i \leq n} \| \varphi_i \|_{\infty}$ .  
 For  $\leq$ : Let  $x \in X$ . Then  $\sum_{i=1}^n | \varphi_i(x) | \leq \sum_{i=1}^n \| \varphi_i \|_{\infty} \| x \|_1 \leq \sum_{i=1}^n \| \varphi_i \|_{\infty} \| x \|_1$ .  
 For  $\geq$ : Let  $i_0 \in \{1, \dots, n\}$  such that  $\| \varphi_{i_0} \|_{\infty} = \max_{1 \leq i \leq n} \| \varphi_i \|_{\infty}$ .  
 Then  $\| \varphi \|_{\infty} \geq \| \varphi_{i_0} \|_{\infty}$ .  
 Conversely, let  $x \in X$  such that  $\sum_{i=1}^n | \varphi_i(x) | = \| \varphi \|_{\infty}$ .  
 Then  $\| \varphi_{i_0} \|_{\infty} \leq \sum_{i=1}^n | \varphi_i(x) | = \| \varphi \|_{\infty}$ .  
 Hence  $\| \varphi \|_{\infty} = \max_{1 \leq i \leq n} \| \varphi_i \|_{\infty}$ .

$$\| \varphi \|_{\infty} = \max_{1 \leq i \leq n} \| \varphi_i \|_{\infty} = \max_{1 \leq i \leq n} \sup_{x \in X} | \varphi_i(x) |$$

$$\| \varphi \|_{\infty} = \sup_{x \in X} \sum_{i=1}^n | \varphi_i(x) | = \sup_{x \in X} \sum_{i=1}^n | \varphi_i(x) |$$

$$\| \varphi \|_{\infty} = \sum_{i=1}^n \| \varphi_i \|_{\infty}$$

Let  $\varphi = (\varphi_1, \dots, \varphi_n) \in X^*$ . We want to show that  $\| \varphi \|_{\infty} = \sum_{i=1}^n \| \varphi_i \|_{\infty}$ .  
 For  $\leq$ : Let  $x \in X$ . Then  $\sum_{i=1}^n | \varphi_i(x) | \leq \sum_{i=1}^n \| \varphi_i \|_{\infty} \| x \|_1 \leq \sum_{i=1}^n \| \varphi_i \|_{\infty} \| x \|_1$ .  
 For  $\geq$ : Let  $i_0 \in \{1, \dots, n\}$  such that  $\| \varphi_{i_0} \|_{\infty} = \max_{1 \leq i \leq n} \| \varphi_i \|_{\infty}$ .  
 Then  $\| \varphi \|_{\infty} \geq \| \varphi_{i_0} \|_{\infty}$ .  
 Conversely, let  $x \in X$  such that  $\sum_{i=1}^n | \varphi_i(x) | = \| \varphi \|_{\infty}$ .  
 Then  $\| \varphi_{i_0} \|_{\infty} \leq \sum_{i=1}^n | \varphi_i(x) | = \| \varphi \|_{\infty}$ .  
 Hence  $\| \varphi \|_{\infty} = \sum_{i=1}^n \| \varphi_i \|_{\infty}$ .

$$\| \varphi \|_{\infty} = \sum_{i=1}^n \| \varphi_i \|_{\infty}$$

$$\| \varphi \|_{\infty} = \sum_{i=1}^n \| \varphi_i \|_{\infty}$$

a subsequence uniformly convergent on  $A$  are that  $P$  be uniformly bounded and equicontinuous."

By Theorem 1, there exists a unique triple  $(u_\lambda; u_{\lambda,x}; u_{\lambda,y})$  corresponding to  $g_\lambda$  for each  $\lambda$ . Since any subsequence of a uniformly convergent sequence is likewise uniformly convergent; and, since any subsequence of a uniformly bounded and equicontinuous sequence is likewise uniformly bounded and equicontinuous; there exists a subsequence  $\{g_\lambda^*\}$  of the sequence  $\{g_\lambda\}$  such that the corresponding sequences

$$(2.24) \quad \{u_\lambda^*\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u, \quad \{u_{\lambda,x}^*\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} v, \quad \{u_{\lambda,y}^*\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} w,$$

where  $u, v, w \in C(R)$ . This results from the following successive extractions of subsequences:

$\{u_\lambda\}$  is equicontinuous and uniformly bounded on  $R$ , hence there exists a subsequence  $\{u_\lambda^1\}$  of  $\{u_\lambda\}$  uniformly convergent on  $R$ .  $\{u_{\lambda,x}^1\}$  is equicontinuous and uniformly bounded on  $R$ , hence there exists a subsequence  $\{u_{\lambda,x}^2\}$  of  $\{u_{\lambda,x}^1\}$  uniformly convergent on  $R$ .  $\{u_{\lambda,y}^2\}$  is equicontinuous and uniformly bounded on  $R$ , hence there exists a subsequence  $\{u_{\lambda,y}^*\}$  of  $\{u_{\lambda,y}^2\}$  uniformly convergent on  $R$ . But, by the one-to-one correspondence mentioned above,  $\{u_{\lambda,x}^*\}$  is a subsequence of  $\{u_{\lambda,x}^2\}$  while  $\{u_\lambda^*\}$  is a subsequence of  $\{u_\lambda^1\}$ . Thus  $\{u_{\lambda,x}^*\}$  and  $\{u_\lambda^*\}$  are each uniformly convergent on  $R$ .

Writing, with the notation  $u_0^* = u_{0,x}^* = u_{0,y}^* = 0$ ,





$$(2.25) \quad u_{\lambda}^* = \sum_{k=1}^{\lambda} (u_k^* - u_{k-1}^*), \quad u_{\lambda,x}^* = \sum_{k=1}^{\lambda} (u_{k,x}^* - u_{k-1,x}^*),$$

$$u_{\lambda,y}^* = \sum_{k=1}^{\lambda} (u_{k,y}^* - u_{k-1,y}^*), \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots),$$

we see that the conditions for differentiation under the summation sign for infinite series are satisfied by (2.24) and the fact that  $u_{\lambda}^* \in C^1(R)$ ,  $(\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$ . Hence

$$(2.26) \quad v(x, y) = u_x(x, y), \quad w(x, y) = u_y(x, y) \quad \text{for } (x, y) \in R$$

We show that the function  $u$  so determined satisfies the integral equation equivalent to the original characteristic initial value problem, i.e.

$$(2.27) \quad u(x, y) = \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u(\xi, \eta); u_x(\xi, \eta), u_y(\xi, \eta)) d\eta$$

for  $(x, y) \in R$ .

For any  $\lambda$ , by (2.4),

$$(2.28) \quad |u(x, y) - \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u(\xi, \eta); u_x(\xi, \eta), u_y(\xi, \eta)) d\eta|$$

$$\leq |u(x, y) - u_{\lambda}^*(x, y)| + \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u(\xi, \eta); u_x(\xi, \eta),$$

$$u_y(\xi, \eta)) - f(\xi, \eta; u_{\lambda}^*(\xi, \eta); u_{\lambda,x}^*(\xi, \eta), u_{\lambda,y}^*(\xi, \eta))| d\eta$$

$$+ \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u_{\lambda}^*(\xi, \eta); u_{\lambda,x}^*(\xi, \eta), u_{\lambda,y}^*(\xi, \eta))$$

$$- f(\xi, \eta; u_{\lambda}^*(\xi, \eta); u_{\lambda,x}^*(\xi, \eta), u_{\lambda,y}^*(\xi, \eta))| d\eta$$

Since  $\{g_{\lambda}^*\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} f$  on  $B'$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda}^*\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u$  on  $R$ , given  $\epsilon > 0$  and  $(x, y) \in R$ , there exists a positive integer  $N_1$ , depending upon  $\epsilon$  alone, such that for  $\lambda > N_1$ ,

1.  $\frac{1}{x^2} = x^{-2}$   $\frac{d}{dx} x^{-2} = -2x^{-3} = -\frac{2}{x^3}$

2.  $\frac{1}{x^3} = x^{-3}$   $\frac{d}{dx} x^{-3} = -3x^{-4} = -\frac{3}{x^4}$

3.  $\frac{1}{x^4} = x^{-4}$   $\frac{d}{dx} x^{-4} = -4x^{-5} = -\frac{4}{x^5}$

4.  $\frac{1}{x^5} = x^{-5}$   $\frac{d}{dx} x^{-5} = -5x^{-6} = -\frac{5}{x^6}$

5.  $\frac{1}{x^6} = x^{-6}$   $\frac{d}{dx} x^{-6} = -6x^{-7} = -\frac{6}{x^7}$

6.  $\frac{1}{x^7} = x^{-7}$   $\frac{d}{dx} x^{-7} = -7x^{-8} = -\frac{7}{x^8}$

7.  $\frac{1}{x^8} = x^{-8}$

8.  $\frac{1}{x^9} = x^{-9}$

9.  $\frac{1}{x^{10}} = x^{-10}$

10.  $\frac{1}{x^{11}} = x^{-11}$

11.  $\frac{1}{x^{12}} = x^{-12}$

$$(2.29) \quad |u(x,y) - u_{\lambda}^*(x,y)| < \epsilon,$$

$$(2.30) \quad \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u_{\lambda}^*(\xi, \eta); u_{\lambda,x}^*(\xi, \eta), u_{\lambda,y}^*(\xi, \eta)) \\ - f(\xi, \eta; u_{\lambda}^*(\xi, \eta); u_{\lambda,x}^*(\xi, \eta), u_{\lambda,y}^*(\xi, \eta))| d\eta \\ < \epsilon / l_1 l_2.$$

Moreover, since  $f$  is uniformly continuous in  $B'$  while  $\{u_{\lambda}^*\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda,x}^*\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda,y}^*\}$  converge uniformly on  $R$  to  $u$ ,  $u_x$ ,  $u_y$  respectively, there exists a positive integer  $N_2$ , depending on  $\epsilon$  alone, such that for  $\lambda > N_2$ ,

$$(2.31) \quad \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u(\xi, \eta); u_x(\xi, \eta), u_y(\xi, \eta)) \\ - f(\xi, \eta; u_{\lambda}^*(\xi, \eta); u_{\lambda,x}^*(\xi, \eta), u_{\lambda,y}^*(\xi, \eta))| d\eta \\ < \epsilon / l_1 l_2.$$

Introducing (2.29), (2.30) and (2.31) into (2.28), we obtain that for  $\lambda > \max(N_1, N_2)$

$$(2.32) \quad |u(x,y) - \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u(\xi, \eta); u_x(\xi, \eta), u_y(\xi, \eta)) \\ < \epsilon(1 + 2l_1 l_2)$$

But  $\epsilon$  is arbitrary, hence (2.27) is verified for each  $(x,y) \in R$ .

We must verify the one additional fact that for each  $(x,y) \in R$ ,  $(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)) \in B$ , instead of just belonging to  $B'$ .



By differentiation from (2.27),

$$(2.33) \quad u_x(x, y) = \int_0^y f(x, \eta; u(x, \eta); u_x(x, \eta), u_y(x, \eta)) d\eta$$

$$(2.34) \quad u_y(x, y) = \int_0^x f(\xi, y; u(\xi, y); u_x(\xi, y), u_y(\xi, y)) d\xi.$$

Hence, from the extended definition of  $f$ , (2.1), and hypothesis 5),

$$(2.35) \quad |u(x, y)| \leq \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u(\xi, \eta); u_x(\xi, \eta), u_y(\xi, \eta))| d\eta \\ \leq M'_1 \ell_2 \leq a$$

$$(2.36) \quad |u_x(x, y)| \leq \int_0^y |f(x, \eta; u(x, \eta); u_x(x, \eta), u_y(x, \eta))| d\eta \\ \leq M'_2 \leq b_1$$

$$(2.37) \quad |u_y(x, y)| \leq \int_0^x |f(\xi, y; u(\xi, y); u_x(\xi, y), u_y(\xi, y))| d\xi \\ \leq M'_1 \leq b_2,$$

thus completing the proof of Theorem 1a.

Remarks a) and b) to Theorem 1 apply as well to Theorem 1a.

By the following example we show that the integral surfaces for Theorem 1a are not necessarily unique:

Example 1 Consider the characteristic initial value problem:

$$(2.38) \quad u_{xy} = |u|^{\frac{1}{\alpha}}; \quad u(x, 0) = u(0, y) = 0.$$

Here  $f(x, y; u; p, q) = |u|^{\frac{1}{\alpha}}$  is continuous for all  $u$  but fails to satisfy a Lipschitz condition on  $u$  at  $u = 0$ . Theorem 1a applies



to insure existence of a solution in a sufficiently small neighborhood of the origin. However, at least two solutions, valid for all  $(x,y)$  in the finite plane, are directly available. First,  $u \equiv 0$  obviously satisfies. Second, if we seek a solution  $u$  satisfying

- i)  $u \geq 0$ ,
- ii) there exist functions  $X, Y$  such that  

$$u(x,y) = X(x) \cdot Y(y);$$

that is, by the method of separation of variables, we obtain immediately the solution  $u(x,y) = \frac{1}{16} x^2 y^2$ .

For purposes of illustrating the various situations that might occur, we give the following:

Example 2. Consider the characteristic initial value problem:

$$(2.39) \quad u_{xy} = |u_x|^{\frac{1}{2}}; \quad u(x,0) = u(0,y) = 0.$$

Here  $f(x,y; u; p,q) = |p|^{\frac{1}{2}}$  is continuous for all  $p$  but fails to satisfy a Lipschitz condition on  $p$  at  $p = 0$ . Since  $p(x,0) = u_x(x,0) = 0$  neither Theorem 1 nor Theorem 1a will insure existence of a solution over any domain including a portion of the  $x$  axis. Such solutions do exist, however. One is  $u \equiv 0$ . Under the assumption  $p = u_x \geq 0$  we obtain another, for now

$$p_y = p^{\frac{1}{2}} \quad \text{or}$$

$$\frac{dp}{p^{\frac{1}{2}}} = 2p^{\frac{1}{2}} = y + c_1.$$

Since  $p(x,0) = 0$ ,  $c_1 = 0$  and

to insure existence of a solution for a relatively small  
 hood of the origin. However, the  
 (2,7) in the state space, respectively, of the  
 origin of the state space, respectively, of the

$$x \geq 0$$

$$x \geq 0 \quad (1)$$

There is a solution for the system of equations  
 which is the solution of the system of equations

in the state space, respectively, of the  
 origin of the state space, respectively, of the

There is a solution for the system of equations

in the state space, respectively, of the

There is a solution for the system of equations

in the state space, respectively, of the

There is a solution for the system of equations

in the state space, respectively, of the

There is a solution for the system of equations

in the state space, respectively, of the

There is a solution for the system of equations



$$p = u_x = \frac{y^2}{4} \quad \text{or, integrating,}$$

$$u = \frac{xy^2}{4} + c_2.$$

Since  $u(0,y) = 0$ ,  $c_2 = 0$ ; and hence

$$u = \frac{xy^2}{4}$$

is a second solution valid throughout the finite plane.

In Example 2 consider the function

$$u_0(x,y) = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{for } x \leq 0 \\ \frac{xy^2}{4} & \text{for } x \geq 0. \end{cases}$$

$u_0$  is continuous for all  $(x,y)$  and satisfies the initial value problem (2.39) everywhere except along the  $y$  axis, where for  $y \neq 0$ ,  $u_{0x}(0,y)$  does not exist. Roughly speaking,  $u_0$  is a continuous integral surface of problem (2.39) having a jump in the normal first derivative across a characteristic.

For equations meeting the continuity, boundedness and partial Lipschitz requirements of Theorem 1a we cannot match integral surfaces in the above fashion to obtain first derivative jumps across characteristics. This follows from the fact that if we prescribe  $u(a,y) = V(y) \in C^1([0, \ell_2])$  along the characteristic  $x=a$ ,  $a \in [0, \ell_1]$ , then

$$(2.40) \quad \begin{cases} p_y(a,y) = f(a,y; V(y); p(a,y), V'(y)) \\ p(a,0) = 0 \end{cases}$$

represents a first order ordinary differential equation for the

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \left( \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x} \right) = \frac{\partial}{\partial x} \left( \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial t} \right)$$

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \left( \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x} \right) = \frac{\partial}{\partial x} \left( \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial t} \right)$$

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \left( \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x} \right) = \frac{\partial}{\partial x} \left( \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial t} \right)$$

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \left( \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x} \right) = \frac{\partial}{\partial x} \left( \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial t} \right)$$

is a second order partial differential equation

in the variables  $x$  and  $t$ .

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \left( \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x} \right) = \frac{\partial}{\partial x} \left( \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial t} \right)$$

The above equation is a second order partial differential equation in the variables  $x$  and  $t$ . It is a hyperbolic equation, and it describes the propagation of waves. The general solution of this equation is given by the d'Alembert formula:

$$\phi(x, t) = \frac{1}{2} \left[ \phi_0(x - ct) + \phi_0(x + ct) \right] + \frac{1}{2c} \int_{x-ct}^{x+ct} \dot{\phi}_0(\xi) d\xi$$

where  $\phi_0(x)$  is the initial displacement and  $\dot{\phi}_0(x)$  is the initial velocity. The function  $\phi(x, t)$  represents the displacement of the string at position  $x$  and time  $t$ . The function  $\phi_0(x)$  is the initial displacement of the string, and  $\dot{\phi}_0(x)$  is the initial velocity of the string. The function  $\phi(x, t)$  is the displacement of the string at position  $x$  and time  $t$ . The function  $\phi_0(x)$  is the initial displacement of the string, and  $\dot{\phi}_0(x)$  is the initial velocity of the string.

unknown function  $p = u_x$  under a one point boundary condition. The conditions that  $f$  be continuous, bounded and partially Lipschitzian are sufficient to insure the existence of a unique determination of  $u_x(a, y)$  for  $y \in [0, l_2]$ . Note that in Example 2 the function  $f$  was continuous only and hence the determination of  $u_x$  from the above ordinary differential equation was not unique, thus admitting the possibility of a jump in  $u_x$ . The conditions for the determination of  $u_y$  along a characteristic  $y = \text{const.}$  are similar.

The above remarks serve to permit the extension of the domain of existence of the integral surfaces of Theorems 1 and 1a from  $R$  to  $R^*$ :

$R$  to  $R^* : \begin{cases} -l_1 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ -l_2 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$ . The arguments for the existence may

be made applicable to other quadrants than the first by mere coordinate reflections. Moreover the integrals obtained in the separate quadrants must have first order contacts with each other along the coordinate axes by the above reasoning from ordinary

differential equation theory. Hence we may obtain existence and

uniqueness over the domain  $R^*$  by replacing  $B$  by  $B^*$  :  $\begin{cases} -l_1 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ -l_2 \leq y \leq l_2 \\ -a \leq u \leq a \\ -b_1 \leq p \leq b_1 \\ -b_2 \leq q \leq b_2 \end{cases}$

in Theorem 1; and we obtain simply existence over  $R^*$  by replacing  $B$  by  $B^*$  in Theorem 1a.

In the classical existence theorem for the ordinary differential equation  $\frac{dy}{dx} = f(x, y)$ , with  $y(0) = 0$ , the conditions that  $f$



be continuous on  $C: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq a \\ -b \leq y \leq b \end{cases}$ , with  $M = \max_{C} |f|$  on  $C$ , were shown to be sufficient to insure existence of at least one integral curve  $y = y(x)$  for  $x \in [0, \alpha]$  with  $\alpha \leq \min(a, \frac{b}{M})$ . This bound,  $\alpha \leq \min(a, \frac{b}{M})$ , was shown by A. WINTNER [15] to be a maximal bound in a certain sense. We apply his method to Theorem 1a in the proof of the following:

Theorem 2.

If, in Theorem 1a, we replace  $B$  by  $B''$ :

$$B'' = \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l'_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l'_2 \\ -\infty < u < \infty \\ -b_1 \leq p \leq b_1 \\ -b_2 \leq q \leq b_2 \end{cases}$$

and require that  $f$  be bounded thereon, then hypothesis 3) in that theorem reduces to

$$3)' \quad l'_1 \leq \min(l'_1, \frac{b_2}{M}), \quad l'_2 \leq \min(l'_2, \frac{b_1}{M}),$$

where  $M = \max_{B''} |f|$  on  $B''$ . Moreover, the bounds established by 3) are maximal bounds in a sense to be explained below.

Proof.

The condition  $M l'_1 l'_2 \leq a$  of hypothesis 3) is immediately satisfied since  $a$  approaches  $+\infty$ . The conditions  $M l'_1 \leq b_2$ ,  $M l'_2 \leq b_1$  may be rewritten as in 3) and are now the only restrictions on  $l'_1$  and  $l'_2$ .

be continuous on  $D$ .  
 be sufficient to insure continuity of  $f$  on  $D$ .  
 $f$  is continuous on  $D$  if and only if  $f$  is continuous on each of the  $D_i$  and  $f$  is continuous on the boundary of  $D$ .  
 in a certain sense, the function  $f$  is continuous on  $D$  if and only if  $f$  is continuous on each of the  $D_i$  and  $f$  is continuous on the boundary of  $D$ .

Theorem 1. Let  $f$  be a function defined on a domain  $D$  in  $\mathbb{R}^n$ . Let  $\{D_i\}$  be a sequence of domains such that  $D = \bigcup_{i=1}^{\infty} D_i$  and  $\overline{D_i} \cap \overline{D_j} = \emptyset$  for  $i \neq j$ . If  $f$  is continuous on each  $D_i$  and on the boundary of  $D$ , then  $f$  is continuous on  $D$ .

Theorem 2. Let  $f$  be a function defined on a domain  $D$  in  $\mathbb{R}^n$ . Let  $\{D_i\}$  be a sequence of domains such that  $D = \bigcup_{i=1}^{\infty} D_i$  and  $\overline{D_i} \cap \overline{D_j} = \emptyset$  for  $i \neq j$ . If  $f$  is continuous on each  $D_i$  and on the boundary of  $D$ , then  $f$  is continuous on  $D$ .

Theorem 3. Let  $f$  be a function defined on a domain  $D$  in  $\mathbb{R}^n$ . Let  $\{D_i\}$  be a sequence of domains such that  $D = \bigcup_{i=1}^{\infty} D_i$  and  $\overline{D_i} \cap \overline{D_j} = \emptyset$  for  $i \neq j$ . If  $f$  is continuous on each  $D_i$  and on the boundary of  $D$ , then  $f$  is continuous on  $D$ .

If  $\ell_1' \leq \frac{b_2}{m}, (\ell_2' \leq \frac{b_1}{m})$ , then the conclusion is immediate.

For, we may take  $f(x, y; u; p, q) = h(x), (g(y))$ , which function is not even defined for  $x > \ell_1 = \ell_1', (y > \ell_2 = \ell_2')$ .

Suppose  $\ell_2' > \frac{b_1}{m}$ . Then we consider the sequence of problems:

$$(2.41) \quad u_{xy} = (2^{1/m} - u_x)^{1/m+1}, \quad u(x, 0) = u(0, y) = 0, \quad (m=1, 2, \dots).$$

Setting  $p = u_x$ , (2.41) becomes

$$p_y(x, y) = (2^{1/m} - p(x, y))^{1/m+1}, \quad p(x, 0) = 0.$$

Integrating this ordinary differential equation for  $p$  as a function of  $y$ , we obtain

$$p(x, y) = 2^{1/m} - \left[ 2^{1/m+1} - \frac{m}{m+1} y \right]^{m+1/m}.$$

But, since  $p = u_x$  and  $u(0, y) = 0$  we may integrate again to obtain

$$(2.42) \quad u(x, y) = x \left\{ 2^{1/m} - \left[ \frac{m}{m+1} (C_m - y) \right]^{m+1/m} \right\}$$

where

$$(2.43) \quad C_m = \frac{m+1}{m} 2^{\frac{1}{m+1}}.$$

The line  $y = C_m$  is a branch line of the solution  $u$ . Under the supposition  $\ell_2' > \frac{b_1}{m}$ , the desired statement is that  $\frac{b_1}{m}$  is a maximal bound on  $\ell_2'$ , i.e., for each  $\epsilon > 0$ , there exists a function  $f(x, y; u; p, q)$ , depending on  $\epsilon$  and satisfying hypotheses 1), 2)' and 3)' on  $\mathcal{D}$ , such that an integral  $u(x, y)$  of the problem corresponding to  $f$  has a singularity for some  $y \in (\frac{b_1}{m}, \frac{b_1}{m} + \epsilon)$ .





Defining

$$f_m(x, y; u; p, q) = (2^{1/m} - p)^{1/m+1} \text{ for } -2^{1/m+1} \leq p \leq 2^{1/m+1},$$

( $m = 1, 2, \dots$ ), we obtain

$$b_{1m} = 2^{1/m+1}, \quad M_m = (2^{1/m} + 2^{1/m+1})^{1/m+1}; \text{ and, since}$$

$$(2^{1/m} + 2^{1/m+1}) > 2, \quad (m = 1, 2, \dots),$$

$$\lim_{m \rightarrow \infty} \frac{b_{1m}}{M_m} = 1 - .$$

Moreover, by (2.43),

$$\lim_{m \rightarrow \infty} C_m = 1 \quad .$$

Hence, given  $\epsilon > 0$ , there exists a positive integer  $N$ , depending on  $\epsilon$  alone, such that  $m > N \Rightarrow$

$$\frac{b_{1m}}{M_m} + \epsilon > C_m > \frac{b_{1m}}{M_m} \quad .$$

Consequently  $\frac{b_1}{M}$  is a maximal bound on  $\mathcal{L}_2$ .

To determine that the condition  $\mathcal{L}_1 \leq \min(\mathcal{L}_1', \frac{b_2}{M})$  is also a maximal bound we consider the sequence of problems.

$$(2.44) \quad u_{xy} = (2^{1/m} - u_y)^{1/m+1}, \quad u(x, 0) = u(0, y), \quad (m = 1, 2, \dots),$$

and follow the same line of reasoning as before. Thus Theorem 2 is verified.

The close parallelism between our conclusions and the classical theorems for first order ordinary differential equations

1917

1917

1917

1917

1917

1917

1917

1917

1917

1917

1917

1917

1917

1917

1917

1917

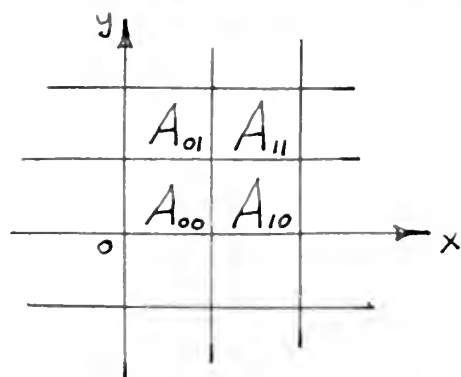
(See F. KAMKE [2] ) leads one to suspect that an existence theorem might be proved wherein mere continuity of the function  $f$  was demanded. The analogue to the Cauchy polygon method is the attack suggested by the parallelism, and it leads to an existence theorem for the characteristic initial value problem:

$$(2.45) \quad u_{xy} = f(x, y; u) \quad , \quad u(x, 0) = u(0, y) = 0.$$

We do not give the proof here; first, because the theorem is a special case of Theorem 1a; and, second, because the steps in the proof are practically identical with those of the Cauchy polygon method for ordinary differential equations.

When  $f = f(x, y; u; p, q)$  and  $f$  is merely continuous this attack involves difficulties which we have not been able to resolve. We sketch the method to indicate the source of trouble:

In a neighborhood of the origin a partition  $\Pi$  by



characteristics is specified where the subregions  $A_{ij}$  in the first quadrant are defined as

$$A_{ij}: \begin{cases} x_i \leq x < x_{i+1} \\ y_j \leq y < y_{j+1} \end{cases} \quad (i, j = 0, 1, 2, \dots)$$

We formulate the approximate integral surface  $u$  corresponding to the partition  $\Pi$  as follows:

$$(2.46) \quad u_{\Pi}(x, y) = \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y F_{\Pi}(\xi, \eta) d\eta.$$

where

1905. 1. 1. (1) The first of the series of experiments was conducted on the 1st of January, 1905. The object of the experiment was to determine the effect of the temperature of the water on the rate of the reaction. The results of the experiment are given in the following table.

(2) The second of the series of experiments was conducted on the 2nd of January, 1905. The object of the experiment was to determine the effect of the concentration of the solution on the rate of the reaction. The results of the experiment are given in the following table.

(3) The third of the series of experiments was conducted on the 3rd of January, 1905. The object of the experiment was to determine the effect of the volume of the solution on the rate of the reaction. The results of the experiment are given in the following table.

(4) The fourth of the series of experiments was conducted on the 4th of January, 1905. The object of the experiment was to determine the effect of the nature of the solvent on the rate of the reaction. The results of the experiment are given in the following table.

(5) The fifth of the series of experiments was conducted on the 5th of January, 1905. The object of the experiment was to determine the effect of the nature of the reactants on the rate of the reaction. The results of the experiment are given in the following table.

(6) The sixth of the series of experiments was conducted on the 6th of January, 1905. The object of the experiment was to determine the effect of the nature of the catalyst on the rate of the reaction. The results of the experiment are given in the following table.

(7) The seventh of the series of experiments was conducted on the 7th of January, 1905. The object of the experiment was to determine the effect of the nature of the medium on the rate of the reaction. The results of the experiment are given in the following table.

(8) The eighth of the series of experiments was conducted on the 8th of January, 1905. The object of the experiment was to determine the effect of the nature of the reactants on the rate of the reaction. The results of the experiment are given in the following table.

$$(2.47) \quad F_{\pi}(x, y) = f(x_i, y_j; u_{\pi}(x_i, y_j); u_{\pi_x}(x_i, y_j),$$

$$u_{\pi_y}(x_i, y_j))$$

for  $(x, y) \in A_{ij}$ .

The principal difficulty lies in the fact that the derivatives

$$(2.48) \quad u_{\pi_x} = \int_0^y F_{\pi}(x, \eta) d\eta \quad \text{and}$$

$$(2.49) \quad u_{\pi_y} = \int_0^x F_{\pi}(\xi, y) d\xi$$

are discontinuous across the partition lines  $x = \text{constant}$  and  $y = \text{constant}$ , respectively, thus preventing the direct application of ARZELA's theorem on equicontinuous functions when we consider the sequence of approximate integral surfaces formed by partition refinement.

The equation of (2.45) appears to be more amenable than the more general equation involving the first derivatives  $p$  and  $q$ . G. FUBINI [16] p. 622, by demanding only that  $f(x, y; u)$  be continuous and Lipschitzian with respect to  $u$ , has proved the existence of a unique integral of  $u_{xy} = f(x, y; u)$  satisfying Dirichlet conditions, i.e. the value of  $u$  prescribed on a closed contour. This result, while remarkable, is not contradictory since  $u$  is shown to have a discontinuity of the second type at one point of the boundary.

We conclude this chapter with the statement of the extension of Theorems 1 and 1a to a system of equations



(2.50)  $u_i = f_i(x, y; u_1, \dots, u_n; p_1, \dots, p_n, q_1, \dots, q_n), (i=1, 2, \dots, n)$   
satisfying the initial conditions

$$(2.51) \quad u_i(x, 0) = u_i(0, y) = 0, \quad (i=1, 2, \dots, n).$$

Theorem 3, below, is a natural extension of Theorem 1. In principle, it was first obtained by O. NICCOLETTI [14] p.7. His statement, however, is not explicit about the bounds on the domain of existence. Moreover, to prove uniqueness he requires the  $f_i$  to be of class  $C^1$ . We obtain the improved statement, Theorem 3, by modifying the arguments of E. KASKE [2] p. 402 and p. 403 to apply them to the system (2.50).

Theorem 3)

$$1) \quad f_i(x, y; u_j; p_j, q_j)^2 \in C(B^n), \quad B^n: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \lambda_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq \lambda_2 \\ -a \leq u_i \leq a \\ -b_1 \leq p_1 \leq b_1 \\ -b_2 \leq q_1 \leq b_2 \end{cases}$$

2) The  $f_i$  are Lipschitzian on  $B^n$ ; i.e. there exists a positive constant  $K$  such that for  $(x, y; u_j^1; p_j^1, q_j^1) \in B^n$ ,

$(x, y; u_j^2; p_j^2, q_j^2) \in B^n$ , and  $i = 1, 2, \dots, n$ ,

$$|f_i(x, y; u_j^1; p_j^1, q_j^1) - f_i(x, y; u_j^2; p_j^2, q_j^2)| \leq K \sum_{j=1}^n \left\{ |u_j^1 - u_j^2| + |p_j^1 - p_j^2| + |q_j^1 - q_j^2| \right\}.$$

3)  $\lambda_1 \lambda_2 \leq a$ ,  $\lambda_1 \leq b_2$ ,  $\lambda_2 \leq b_1$  where

$$M = \max \left\{ |f_1|, \dots, |f_n| \right\} \text{ on } B^n.$$

<sup>2</sup> Notation:  $(x, y; u_j; p_j, q_j) = (x, y; u_1, \dots, u_n; p_1, \dots, p_n, q_1, \dots, q_n).$

1. The first part of the document is a list of names (2000).

2. The second part of the document is a list of names (2000).

3. The third part of the document is a list of names (2000).

4. The fourth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

5. The fifth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

6. The sixth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

7. The seventh part of the document is a list of names (2000).

8. The eighth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

9. The ninth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

10. The tenth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

11. The eleventh part of the document is a list of names (2000).

12. The twelfth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

13. The thirteenth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

14. The fourteenth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

15. The fifteenth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

16. The sixteenth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

17. The seventeenth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

18. The eighteenth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

19. The nineteenth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

20. The twentieth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

21. The twenty-first part of the document is a list of names (2000).

22. The twenty-second part of the document is a list of names (2000).

23. The twenty-third part of the document is a list of names (2000).

24. The twenty-fourth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

25. The twenty-fifth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

26. The twenty-sixth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

27. The twenty-seventh part of the document is a list of names (2000).

28. The twenty-eighth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

29. The twenty-ninth part of the document is a list of names (2000).

30. The thirtieth part of the document is a list of names (2000).



$\Rightarrow$  4) There exists one and only one set of functions

$\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$ ,  $u_j(x, y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{j,xy}(x, y) \in C(R)$ ,  $(j=1, \dots, n)$ ,  
where  $R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$ , such that for each  $(x, y) \in R$  the point

$(x, y; u_j(x, y); u_{j,x}(x, y), u_{j,y}(x, y)) \in B^n$ , and

$$u_{1,xy}(x, y) = f_1(x, y; u_j(x, y); u_{j,x}(x, y), u_{j,y}(x, y)),$$

$$u_1(x, 0) = u_1(0, y) = 0, \quad (i = 1, \dots, n), \text{ for each } (x, y) \in R.$$

By relaxing hypothesis 2) we obtain the improved theorem below; which stands in the same relation to Theorem 3 that Theorem 1a does to Theorem 1.

### Theorem 3a

1)

2)' The  $f_i$  are partially Lipschitzian on  $B^n$ ; i.e. there exists a positive constant  $K$  such that for  $(x, y; u_j; p_j^1, q_j^1) \in B^n$ ,  
 $(x, y; u_j; p_j^2, q_j^2) \in B^n$ , and  $i = 1, 2, \dots, n$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} & |f_i(x, y; u_j; p_j^1, q_j^1) - f_i(x, y; u_j; p_j^2, q_j^2)| \\ & \leq K \sum_{j=1}^n \{ |p_j^1 - p_j^2| + |q_j^1 - q_j^2| \}. \end{aligned}$$

3)

$\Rightarrow$  4)' There exists at least one set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$ ,  
 $u_j(x, y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{j,xy}(x, y) \in C(R)$ ,  $(j=1, \dots, n)$ , where



$R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$ , such that for each  $(x, y) \in R$  the point

$(x, y; u_j(x, y); u_{j,x}(x, y), u_{j,y}(x, y)) \in B''$ , and

$u_{i,xy}(x, y) = f_i(x, y; u_j(x, y); u_{j,x}(x, y), u_{j,y}(x, y))$ ,

$u_i(x, 0) = u_i(0, y) = 0$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$ , for each  $(x, y) \in R$ .

The proof of Theorem 3a is essentially a step by step repetition of that for Theorem 1a. WEIERSTRASS' theorem tells us that for each positive integer  $i$  there exists a sequence of polynomials  $\{g_{i\lambda}\}$   $(x, y; u_j; p_j, q_j)$ ,  $(\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$ , converging uniformly on  $B''$  to  $f_i(x, y; u_j; p_j, q_j)$ . We extend the  $g_{i\lambda}$  and the  $f_i$  as before and obtain that there exist positive constants  $L_i$  such that for each  $i$   $|g_{i\lambda}| \leq L_i$  on  $B''$ , extended, and for all  $\lambda$ . We let  $L = \max \{L_1, \dots, L_n\}$  and proceed as before, using Theorem 3 in place of Theorem 1 to obtain the integral  $u_{i\lambda}$  associated with each  $g_{i\lambda}$ .

We note only one point of significant difference in the arguments. In place of inequality (2.13) of Lemma 2 we now have the inequalities

$$|u_{i\lambda,x}(x_2, y) - u_{i\lambda,x}(x_1, y)| \leq K \int_0^y \left\{ \sum_{j=1}^n |u_{j\lambda,x}(x_2, \eta) - u_{j\lambda,x}(x_1, \eta)| \right\} d\eta$$

Summing these, and letting

$$Z(y) = \sum_{i=1}^n |u_{i\lambda,x}(x_2, y) - u_{i\lambda,x}(x_1, y)|,$$

we obtain

$$R = \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq 1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq 1 \end{cases}$$

$$(x, y) \in R \implies (x, y) \in R \implies (x, y) \in R$$

$$(x, y) \in R \implies (x, y) \in R \implies (x, y) \in R$$

$$R(x, y) = R(y, x) = R(x, y)$$

The proof of Theorem 1 is based on the following lemma:

Lemma 1. Let  $R$  be a relation on a set  $S$ . Then

(a)  $R$  is reflexive if and only if  $R(x, x) = 1$  for all  $x \in S$ .

(b)  $R$  is symmetric if and only if  $R(x, y) = R(y, x)$  for all  $x, y \in S$ .

(c)  $R$  is transitive if and only if  $R(x, y) = 1$  and  $R(y, z) = 1$  imply  $R(x, z) = 1$  for all  $x, y, z \in S$ .

(d)  $R$  is an equivalence relation if and only if  $R$  is reflexive, symmetric, and transitive.

(e)  $R$  is a partial order relation if and only if  $R$  is reflexive, antisymmetric, and transitive.

(f)  $R$  is a total order relation if and only if  $R$  is a partial order relation and for all  $x, y \in S$ , either  $R(x, y) = 1$  or  $R(y, x) = 1$ .

(g)  $R$  is a linear order relation if and only if  $R$  is a total order relation and for all  $x, y, z \in S$ , if  $R(x, y) = 1$  and  $R(y, z) = 1$ , then  $R(x, z) = 1$ .

(h)  $R$  is a well-order relation if and only if  $R$  is a linear order relation and every non-empty subset of  $S$  has a least element.

(i)  $R$  is a strict total order relation if and only if  $R$  is a total order relation and for all  $x, y \in S$ , either  $R(x, y) = 1$  or  $R(y, x) = 1$ , but not both.

(j)  $R$  is a strict linear order relation if and only if  $R$  is a strict total order relation and for all  $x, y, z \in S$ , if  $R(x, y) = 1$  and  $R(y, z) = 1$ , then  $R(x, z) = 1$ .

(k)  $R$  is a strict well-order relation if and only if  $R$  is a strict linear order relation and every non-empty subset of  $S$  has a least element.

(l)  $R$  is a strict total order relation if and only if  $R$  is a strict linear order relation and for all  $x, y, z \in S$ , if  $R(x, y) = 1$  and  $R(y, z) = 1$ , then  $R(x, z) = 1$ .

(m)  $R$  is a strict linear order relation if and only if  $R$  is a strict total order relation and for all  $x, y, z \in S$ , if  $R(x, y) = 1$  and  $R(y, z) = 1$ , then  $R(x, z) = 1$ .

(n)  $R$  is a strict well-order relation if and only if  $R$  is a strict linear order relation and every non-empty subset of  $S$  has a least element.

(o)  $R$  is a strict total order relation if and only if  $R$  is a strict linear order relation and for all  $x, y, z \in S$ , if  $R(x, y) = 1$  and  $R(y, z) = 1$ , then  $R(x, z) = 1$ .

(p)  $R$  is a strict linear order relation if and only if  $R$  is a strict total order relation and for all  $x, y, z \in S$ , if  $R(x, y) = 1$  and  $R(y, z) = 1$ , then  $R(x, z) = 1$ .

(q)  $R$  is a strict well-order relation if and only if  $R$  is a strict linear order relation and every non-empty subset of  $S$  has a least element.

(r)  $R$  is a strict total order relation if and only if  $R$  is a strict linear order relation and for all  $x, y, z \in S$ , if  $R(x, y) = 1$  and  $R(y, z) = 1$ , then  $R(x, z) = 1$ .

$$0 \leq z(y) \leq \kappa n \int_0^y z(\eta) d\eta + n(\mu + \zeta)$$

to which Lemma 1 applies. Thus the equicontinuity of each of the sequences  $\{u_{1\lambda, x}\}$ ,  $(1 = 1, \dots, n)$  is assured.

Remarks a) and b) to Theorems 1 and 1a apply, with obvious modifications, to Theorems 3 and 3a. Moreover, as before, we may extend the domain of existence of the integral surfaces of Theorems 3 and 3a from  $R$  to  $R^*$ :  $\begin{cases} -l_1 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ -l_2 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$ .

The set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$  representing the solution to the problem of Theorem 3a cannot be shown to be unique. This is made evident by extending Example 1 to the system

$$\begin{aligned} u_{1,xy} &= |u_1|^{\frac{1}{2}}, & u_1(x,0) &= u_1(0,y) = 0 \\ u_{2,xy} &= 0, & u_2(x,0) &= u_2(0,y) = 0 \\ &\vdots & &\vdots \\ u_{n,xy} &= 0, & u_n(x,0) &= u_n(0,y) = 0 \end{aligned}$$

for which  $u_1 \equiv 0$   $(1 = 2, \dots, n)$

while  $u_1 \equiv 0$  or  $u_1 = \frac{1}{16} x^2 y^2$ . Thus at least two sets of solutions are possible for this system which satisfies the hypotheses of Theorem 3a.

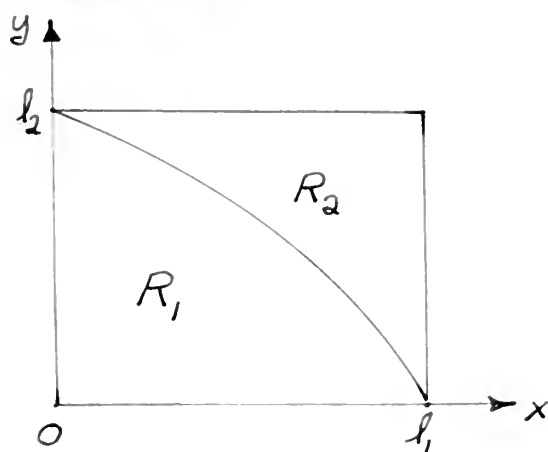


## CHAPTER III

The Cauchy Problem for  $u_{xy} = f(x, y; u; u_x, u_y)$ .

The development of this chapter closely parallels that of Chapter II. Consequently, the notation will be abridged, in particular with respect to the arguments of functions; and the proofs will be merely outlined to show minor variations from the statements in Chapter 2.

For reference, we state the following theorem proved first for systems of equations by O. NICCOLETTI [14] p. 7. Our statement may be easily inferred from that of E. KAMKE [2] p. 405 and p. 410, by a slight modification of his proof.

Theorem 4

$$1) f(x, y; u; p, q) \in C(B),$$

$$B: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \\ -a \leq u \leq a \\ -b_1 \leq p \leq b_1 \\ -b_2 \leq q \leq b_2 \end{cases}$$

2)  $f$  is Lipschitzian on  $B$ , (as defined in Theorem 1).

3)  $M l_1 l_2 \leq a$ ,  $M l_1 \leq b_2$ ,  $M l_2 \leq b_1$ , where  $M = \max |f|$  on  $B$

4)  $\gamma: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ y = \varphi(x) \end{cases}$  where  $\varphi(x) \in C^1([0, l_1])$ ,  $\varphi'(x) \neq 0$  for  $x \in [0, l_1]$  and  $\varphi(0) = l_2$ ,  $\varphi(l_1) = 0$ .

11-11-65

to study the effect of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the

the development of the new material on the



$\Rightarrow$  5) There exists one and only one function  $u(x,y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{xy}(x,y) \in C(R)$ , where  $R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \lambda_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq \lambda_2 \end{cases}$ , such that for each  $(x,y) \in R$ , the point  $(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)) \in B$ , and  $u_{xy}(x,y) = f(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y))$ ,  
 $u(x, \varphi(x)) = u_x(x, \varphi(x)) = u_y(x, \varphi(x)) = 0$

for each  $(x,y) \in R$ .

Remarks c) Suppose we prescribe  $u(x, \varphi(x)) = U(x)$ ,  $u_x(x, \varphi(x)) = P(x)$ ,  $u_y(x, \varphi(x)) = Q(x)$  where  $U(x) \in C^1([0, \lambda_1])$  while  $P(x), Q(x) \in C([0, \lambda_1])$ . Our prescription must satisfy the strip condition  $U' = P + Q \cdot \varphi'$  for each  $x \in [0, \lambda_1]$ . Consider the function  $w(x,y) = U(x) + (y - \varphi(x)) Q(x)$ . Clearly,  $w_{xy} = Q'(x)$  while  $w(x, \varphi(x)) = U(x)$ ,  $w_x(x, \varphi(x)) = P(x)$ , and  $w_y(x, \varphi(x)) = Q(x)$ . Hence the function  $v = u - w$  must satisfy  $v_{xy} = Q'(x) + f(x,y; v + w; v_x + w_x, v_y + w_y)$ , with  $v(x, \varphi(x)) = v_x(x, \varphi(x)) = v_y(x, \varphi(x)) = 0$ , a problem of the type covered by Theorem 4.

d) Hypothesis 4) of Theorem 4 is more restrictive than it need be. At isolated points of  $\gamma$  we may have a horizontal or vertical tangent, provided that  $\gamma$  does not cross the same characteristic more than once. For, under these conditions the inverse function  $\psi$  to  $\varphi$  will exist and be continuous for all  $y \in [0, \lambda_2]$ .

Our improvement of this theorem is as follows:

→ The first part of the document is a list of names and addresses.

1. Mr. J. H. Smith, 123 Main St., New York, N.Y.

2. Mr. W. B. Jones, 456 Elm St., Chicago, Ill.

3. Mr. R. L. Brown, 789 Oak St., Boston, Mass.

4. Mr. T. M. Green, 101 Pine St., Philadelphia, Pa.

5. Mr. S. K. White, 202 Cedar St., San Francisco, Cal.

6. Mr. L. P. Black, 303 Maple St., St. Louis, Mo.

7. Mr. D. E. Gray, 404 Birch St., Portland, Me.

8. Mr. F. G. Hall, 505 Spruce St., Seattle, Wash.

9. Mr. H. I. King, 606 Fir St., Denver, Colo.

10. Mr. J. K. Lee, 707 Willow St., Salt Lake City, Utah.

11. Mr. M. N. Owen, 808 Ash St., Sacramento, Cal.

12. Mr. P. Q. Reed, 909 Hickory St., Fresno, Cal.

13. Mr. R. S. Taylor, 1010 Walnut St., Los Angeles, Cal.

14. Mr. T. U. Vance, 1111 Chestnut St., San Diego, Cal.

15. Mr. V. W. Webb, 1212 Olive St., San Jose, Cal.

Theorem 4a

1)

2)'  $f$  is partially Lipschitzian on  $B$ , (as defined in Theorem

1a).

3)

4)

$\Rightarrow$  5) There exists at least one function  $u(x,y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  
 $u_{xy}(x,y) \in C(R)$ , where  $R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$ , such that for each

$(x,y) \in R$ , the point  $(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)) \in B$ , and

$$u_{xy}(x,y) = f(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)),$$

$$u(x, \varphi(x)) = u_x(x, \varphi(x)) = u_y(x, \varphi(x)) = 0$$

for each  $(x,y) \in R$ .

Outline of proof.

The path  $\gamma$  may also be expressed as  $\gamma: \begin{cases} x = \psi(y) \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$  where

$\psi(y) \in C^1([0, l_2])$ ,  $\psi'(y) \neq 0$  for  $y \in [0, l_2]$ .  $\psi$  is the inverse function to  $\varphi$ .

We may express the problem as the integral equation

$$(3.1) \quad u(x,y) = \int_{\psi(y)}^x d\xi \int_{\varphi(\xi)}^y f(\xi, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\eta$$

$$\text{whence} \quad = \int_{\varphi(x)}^y d\eta \int_{\psi(\eta)}^x f(\xi, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\xi$$

$$(3.2) \quad u_x(x,y) = \int_{\varphi(x)}^y f(x, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\eta$$

$$(3.3) \quad u_y(x,y) = \int_{\psi(y)}^x f(\xi, y; u; u_x, u_y) d\xi.$$

RECEIVED

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

26

27

28

29

30

31

32

33

34

35

36

37

38

39

40

By WEIERSTRASS' theorem, there exists a sequence of polynomials  $\{g_\lambda\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif.}} f$  on  $B$ . We extend the domain of definition of  $f$  and the polynomials  $g_\lambda$  over  $B$  to  $B'$  by definition (2.1).

We obtain again the constant  $L > 0$  such that  $|g_\lambda| \leq L$  in  $B'$  for all  $\lambda$ . Moreover, for each  $g_\lambda$  the Lipschitz condition (2.2) is satisfied. Thus, by Theorem 4, for each  $\lambda$  there exists a unique solution  $u_\lambda$  to the problem

$$(3.4) \quad \begin{cases} u_{\lambda,xy} = g_\lambda(x,y; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}), \\ u_\lambda(x, \varphi(x)) = u_{\lambda,x}(x, \varphi(x)) = u_{\lambda,y}(x, \varphi(x)) = 0. \end{cases}$$

That the sequences  $\{u_\lambda\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda,x}\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda,y}\}$  are uniformly bounded on  $R$ , and that the sequence  $\{u_\lambda\}$  is equicontinuous on  $R$  is immediately evident from the equivalent integral expressions

$$(3.5) \quad \begin{aligned} u_\lambda(x,y) &= \int_{\varphi(y)}^x d\xi \int_{\varphi(\xi)}^y g_\lambda(\xi, \eta; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) d\eta \\ &= \int_{\varphi(x)}^y d\eta \int_{\varphi(\eta)}^x g_\lambda(\xi, \eta; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) d\xi. \end{aligned}$$

$$(3.6) \quad u_{\lambda,x}(x,y) = \int_{\varphi(x)}^y g_\lambda(x, \eta; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) d\eta,$$

$$(3.7) \quad u_{\lambda,y}(x,y) = \int_{\varphi(y)}^x g_\lambda(\xi, y; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) d\xi.$$

We now establish the equicontinuity of  $\{u_{\lambda,x}\}$  and of  $\{u_{\lambda,y}\}$ . This done, the same arguments as those for the proof of Theorem 1a will serve to obtain a subsequence  $\{u_{\lambda^k}\}$  of  $\{u_\lambda\}$  which converges uniformly to the solution  $u$ .



There is no loss in generality in restricting ourselves at this point to the consideration of those points  $(x, y) \in R_2: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \lambda_1 \\ \varphi(x) \leq y \leq \lambda_2 \end{cases}$ .

For we shall see that the arguments developed below will apply as well for  $(x, y) \in R_1: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \lambda_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq \varphi(x) \end{cases}$  after a simple coordinate

translation and rotation. Thus if we insure existence of a solution on  $R_2$ , existence on  $R_1$  is simultaneously verified. Moreover, the Cauchy initial data insure that such integral surfaces have a first order contact along  $\gamma$  and hence define an integral surface throughout all of  $R = R_1 + R_2$ .

Given points  $(x_2, y_2) \in R_2$ ,  $(x_1, y_1) \in R_2$ , it is always possible to label these points in such a way that  $(x_1, y_2) \in R_2$ . This being done, we have that

$$(3.8) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y_2) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y_1)| \leq L |y_2 - y_1|,$$

$$(3.9) \quad |u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, y_2)| \leq L |x_2 - x_1|.$$

Assuming, without loss, that  $y \geq \varphi(x_2) \geq \varphi(x_1)$ , we have that

$$(3.10) \quad u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y) = \int_{\varphi(x_2)}^y [g_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) - g_{\lambda}(x_1, \eta; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y})] d\eta \\ + \int_{\varphi(x_1)}^{\varphi(x_2)} g_{\lambda}(x_1, \eta; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\eta$$

We operate on the first integral on the right hand side of (3.10) in the manner demonstrated in equation (2.20). We obtain a formula identical with (2.20) except that here the lower limit of integration is  $y = \varphi(x_2)$  instead of  $y = 0$ . For brevity, we omit the formula.

*Journal of Management Studies*, 19(1), 67-80.

... ..

1. The first step is to identify the problem or question that needs to be answered. This involves understanding the context and the specific requirements of the task.

Figure 1. The effect of the concentration of the *Agrobacterium* suspension on the transformation efficiency of *Agrobacterium* strains.



Since

$$(3.11) \quad \left| \int_{\varphi(x_1)}^{\varphi(x_2)} \varepsilon_{\lambda}(x_1, \eta; u_{\lambda}, u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\eta \right| \leq L |\varphi(x_2) - \varphi(x_1)|, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$$

and since  $\varphi(x)$  is uniformly continuous on  $[0, \ell_1]$ , by the same reasoning as before we arrive at the slight modification to Lemma 2,

$$(3.12) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y)| \leq K \int_{\varphi(x_2)}^y |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta)| d\eta + \mu + \zeta$$

from which, by Lemma 1,

$$(3.13) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y)| \leq (\mu + \zeta) e^{k(y - \varphi(x_2))} \leq (\mu + \zeta) e^{k\ell_2}.$$

The equicontinuity of  $\{u_{\lambda, x}\}$  is thus assured.

The argument for the equicontinuity of  $\{u_{\lambda, y}\}$  is similar, hence Theorem 4a obtains.

Remarks c) and d) to Theorem 4 apply as well to Theorem 4a. Quite obviously, if  $f$  is continuous, bounded and Lipschitzian (or partially Lipschitzian) on the infinite cylinder with cross section  $R$ , then hypothesis 3) of Theorem 4 (or 4a) is immediately satisfied. In fact, this was the form of Theorem 4 which was utilized in the proof of Theorem 4a.

As previously mentioned, the extension of Theorem 4 to systems of equations was first obtained, in principle, by O. NICCOLI [14]. He was not, however, explicit about the domain of existence of the solution. The following statement may be derived

00000

(1148)

... ..  
... ..  
... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

from the same arguments of E. KAMKE [2] p. 405 and p. 410 used as the basis for Theorem 4.

Theorem 5.

$$1) \quad f_i(x, y; u_1, \dots, u_n; p_1, \dots, p_n, q_1, \dots, q_n) \in C(B^n)$$

$$B^n: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \\ -a \leq u_i \leq a \\ -b_1 \leq p_i \leq b_1 \\ -b_2 \leq q_i \leq b_2 \end{cases} \quad (i = 1, \dots, n).$$

2) The  $f_i$  are Lipschitzian on  $B^n$ , (as defined in Theorem 3).

3)  $M l_1 l_2 \leq a$ ,  $M l_1 \leq b_2$ ,  $M l_2 \leq b_1$ , where

$$M = \max \{ |f_1|, \dots, |f_n| \} \text{ on } B^n.$$

$$4) \quad \gamma: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ y = \varphi(x) \end{cases} \text{ where } \varphi(x) \in C'([0, l_1]), \quad \varphi'(x) \neq 0$$

$$\text{for } x \in [0, l_1] \text{ and } \varphi(0) = l_2, \quad \varphi(l_1) = 0.$$

$\Rightarrow$  5) There exists one and only one set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$ ,

$$u_i(x, y) \in C^1(R), \quad u_{i,xy}(x, y) \in C(R), \quad (i = 1, \dots, n), \text{ where}$$

$$R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}, \text{ such that for each } (x, y) \in R \text{ the point}$$

$$(x, y; u_j(x, y); u_{j,x}(x, y), u_{j,y}(x, y)) \in B, \text{ and}$$

$$u_{i,xy}(x, y) = f_i(x, y; u_j(x, y), u_{j,x}(x, y), u_{j,y}(x, y)),$$

$$u_i(x, \varphi(x)) = u_{i,x}(x, \varphi(x)) = u_{i,y}(x, \varphi(x)) = 0,$$

$$(i = 1, \dots, n), \text{ for each } (x, y) \in R.$$

1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000

SECRET

100

100

We may extend the arguments in the proof of Theorem 4a to apply to systems of equations. The extension is practically identical with the previous extension of Theorem 1a to Theorem 3a, except that now Theorem 5 is used to establish existence and uniqueness of the solutions of the system

$$u_{i\lambda,xy} = f_{i\lambda}(x,y; u_{j\lambda}; u_{j\lambda,x}, u_{j\lambda,y}), \quad (i=1, \dots, n),$$

$$(\lambda = 1, 2, \dots),$$

under the Cauchy initial conditions. We obtain the following theorem:

Theorem 5a

1)

2)' the  $f_i$  are partially Lipschitzian on  $R^n$ , (as defined in Theorem 3a).

3)

4)

$\Rightarrow$  5)' There exists at least one set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$ ,

$u_i(x,y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{i,xy}(x,y) \in C(R)$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$ , where

$R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$ , such that for each  $(x,y) \in R$  the point

$(x,y; u_{j\lambda}(x,y); u_{j\lambda,x}(x,y), u_{j\lambda,y}(x,y)) \in R$ , and

$u_{i,xy}(x,y) = f_{i\lambda}(x,y; u_{j\lambda}(x,y); u_{j\lambda,x}(x,y), u_{j\lambda,y}(x,y))$ ,

$u_i(x, \varphi(x)) = u_{i,x}(x, \varphi(x)) = u_{i,y}(x, \varphi(x)) = 0$ ,

$(i = 1, \dots, n)$ , for each  $(x,y) \in R$ .

I am writing to you to tell you that I am  
very well and hope you are the same. I  
am very busy at the moment but I will  
write to you again soon. I am  
very much interested in you and  
hope you are the same.

I am very much interested in you and  
hope you are the same.

I am very much interested in you and  
hope you are the same.

I am very much interested in you and  
hope you are the same.

I am very much interested in you and  
hope you are the same.

I am very much interested in you and  
hope you are the same.

I am very much interested in you and  
hope you are the same.

I am very much interested in you and  
hope you are the same.

I am very much interested in you and  
hope you are the same.

I am very much interested in you and  
hope you are the same.

Remark c), with obvious modifications, and Remark d) to Theorem 4 apply as well as to Theorems 5 and 5a. Moreover, in Theorem 5 (or 5a) we may eliminate hypothesis 3) by demanding that the  $f_1$  be continuous, bounded and Lipschitzian (or partially Lipschitzian) on the infinite cylinder with cross section R.

1. The first part of the report deals with the general situation of the country and the results of the survey. It is divided into two main sections: the first section deals with the general situation of the country and the results of the survey, and the second section deals with the specific results of the survey.

2. The second part of the report deals with the specific results of the survey. It is divided into three main sections: the first section deals with the results of the survey in the field of agriculture, the second section deals with the results of the survey in the field of industry, and the third section deals with the results of the survey in the field of commerce.

3. The third part of the report deals with the conclusions and recommendations. It is divided into two main sections: the first section deals with the conclusions and the second section deals with the recommendations.



## CHAPTER IV

Existence Theorems for Canonical  
Hyperbolic First Order Systems

In this chapter, and in Chapters 5 and 6 as well, we shall not give explicit domains of definition for the functions involved in the differential equations. As a consequence, existence will be shown "in the small" only. We do this because our method of attack will not yield any improvement upon the domains of existence, no matter how large the domains of definition are taken, provided the other hypotheses are not weakened. We shall elaborate on this peculiarity in the course of the exposition.

Theorems 6 and 7 below were given by M. CINQUINI-CIERARIO [12] p. 180 in the form stated. A statement under somewhat weaker hypotheses, but based on the same proof, may be found in R. COURANT-D. HILBERT [17] p. 324. We examine the proof to show that the arguments therein are independent of the uniqueness of the solutions to the problems involved. As a consequence, our results in Chapters 2 and 3 apply and we arrive at the improved statements given by Theorems 6a and 7a, where hypothesis 2) of Theorems 6 and 7 is dropped altogether and the corresponding conclusions are altered to read "at least one".

Common hypothesis 1) We shall suppose the functions  $a_{ik}, c_i$ ,  $(i, k=1, \dots, n)$ , of arguments  $x, y, u_1, \dots, u_n$ , to be continuously differentiable with bounded derivatives in a certain domain  $D$ . Fur-



ther, we suppose the determinant

$$(4.1) \quad |a_{ik}| \neq 0 \quad \text{in } D.$$

Under these assumptions, the system

$$(4.2) \quad \begin{cases} A_i(x, y) = \sum_{k=1}^n a_{ik} u_{k,x}(x, y) - c_i = 0, & (i=1, \dots, m < n) \\ B_i(x, y) = \sum_{k=1}^n a_{ik} u_{k,y}(x, y) - c_i = 0, & (i=m+1, \dots, n) \end{cases}$$

is called a canonical hyperbolic first order system.

Theorem 6. (Characteristic initial value problem.)

1)

2) All first derivatives of the functions  $a_{ik}, c_i$ ,  $(i, k=1, \dots, n)$  satisfy a Lipschitz condition with respect to arguments  $u_1, \dots, u_n$  in  $D$ .

$$3) \quad \left. \begin{aligned} U_i(x) &\in C^1([0, \ell_1]) \\ V_i(y) &\in C^1([0, \ell_2]) \\ U_i(0) &= V_i(0) \end{aligned} \right\} \quad (i=1, \dots, n)$$

Moreover, for each  $x \in [0, \ell_1]$ , the point  $(x, 0; U_j(x)) \in D$

and

$$(4.3) \quad \sum_{k=1}^n a_{ik}(x, 0; U_j(x)) U'_k(x) - c_i(x, 0; U_j(x)) = 0, \\ (i=1, \dots, m < n);$$

and, for each  $y \in [0, \ell_2]$ , the point  $(0, y; V_j(y)) \in D$  and

$$(4.4) \quad \sum_{k=1}^n a_{ik}(0, y; V_j(y)) V'_k(y) - c_i(0, y; V_j(y)) = 0, \\ (i=m+1, \dots, n).$$

---

3. Recall the notation:  $(x, y; U_j(x)) = (x, y; U_1(x), \dots, U_n(x))$ .

CONTENTS

1001 *Bayesian Inference for the Generalized Linear Model with a Link Function* ... 1001

1011 *Bayesian Inference for the Generalized Linear Model with a Link Function* ... 1011

1021 *Bayesian Inference for the Generalized Linear Model with a Link Function* ... 1021

1031 *Bayesian Inference for the Generalized Linear Model with a Link Function* ... 1031

1041

1051 *Bayesian Inference for the Generalized Linear Model with a Link Function* ... 1051

1061 *Bayesian Inference for the Generalized Linear Model with a Link Function* ... 1061

1071

1081

$\Rightarrow$  4) There exists one and only one set of functions

$\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$ ,  $u_i(x, y) \in C^1(R_\eta)$ ,  $u_{i,xy} \in C(R_\eta)$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$ ,  
 where  $R_\eta : \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \eta l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq \eta l_2 \end{cases}$ , with  $0 < \eta \leq 1$  and  $\eta$  sufficiently

small, such that the set of functions satisfies the system (4.2)

for each  $(x, y) \in R_\eta$  and satisfies the conditions

$$\left. \begin{aligned} u_1(x, 0) &= U_1(x) \quad \text{for } x \in [0, l_1] \\ u_1(0, y) &= V_1(y) \quad \text{for } y \in [0, l_2] \end{aligned} \right\} (i = 1, \dots, n).$$

#### Theorem 6a.

1)

3)

$\Rightarrow$  4)' There exists at least one set of functions, etc. (as in Theorem 6).

#### Theorem 7. (Cauchy problem.)

1)

2) (as in Theorem 6.)

5)  $\gamma : \begin{cases} x = x(\tau) \\ y = y(\tau) \end{cases}$  for  $\tau \in [0, 1]$ ,  $x(\tau)$  and  $y(\tau) \in C^1([0, 1])$

and strictly monotone, i.e.,  $\dot{x} \neq 0$ ,  $\dot{y} \neq 0$  on  $[0, 1]$ .

$U_i(\tau) \in C^1([0, 1])$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$ . For each  $\tau \in [0, 1]$ , the point  $(x(\tau), y(\tau); U_j(\tau)) \in D$ .

$\Rightarrow$  6) There exists one and only one set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$ ,  
 $u_i(x, y) \in C^1(R_\gamma)$ ,  $u_{i,xy}(x, y) \in C(R_\gamma)$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$ , where  $R_\gamma$   
 is a sufficiently small neighborhood of the curve  $\gamma$ , such that

... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..

... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..

... ..

... ..  
... ..  
... ..

... ..

the set of functions satisfies the system (4.2) for each  $(x, y) \in R_\gamma$  and satisfies the conditions

$$u_i(x(\tau), y(\tau)) = u_i(\tau) \quad \text{for } \tau \in [0, 1], \quad (i = 1, \dots, n).$$

### Theorem 7a

1)

5)

$\Rightarrow$  6)' There exists at least one set of functions etc. (as in Theorem 7.)

The proofs of these theorems are contained in the following argument:

Suppose we have a set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$ , either as a solution to the characteristic initial value problem above on a domain  $R_\eta$ , or as a solution to the Cauchy problem above on a domain  $R_\gamma$ . Then for either case,

$$(4.5) \quad A_{1,y} = \sum_{k=1}^n a_{1k} u_{k,xy} + \sum_{k=1}^n \left[ a_{1k,y} + \sum_{r=1}^n \frac{\partial a_{1k}}{\partial u_r} u_{r,y} \right] u_{k,x} - c_{1,y} - \sum_{k=1}^n \frac{\partial c_1}{\partial u_k} u_{k,y} = 0, \quad (i = 1, \dots, m < n),$$

$$(4.6) \quad A_{1,x} = \sum_{k=1}^n a_{1k} u_{k,xy} + \sum_{k=1}^n \left[ a_{1k,x} + \sum_{r=1}^n \frac{\partial a_{1k}}{\partial u_r} u_{r,x} \right] u_{k,y} - c_{1,x} - \sum_{k=1}^n \frac{\partial c_1}{\partial u_k} u_{k,x} = 0, \quad (i = m+1, \dots, n).$$

Equations (4.5) and (4.6) are  $n$  linear algebraic equations in the

The first part of the paper is devoted to the study of the  
 properties of the function  $f(x)$  defined by the equation  

$$f(x) = \int_0^x f(t) dt + \int_0^x f(t) dt + \dots$$

# REFERENCES

1. ...
2. ...
3. ...
4. ...
5. ...
6. ...
7. ...
8. ...
9. ...
10. ...
11. ...
12. ...
13. ...
14. ...
15. ...
16. ...
17. ...
18. ...
19. ...
20. ...
21. ...
22. ...
23. ...
24. ...
25. ...
26. ...
27. ...
28. ...
29. ...
30. ...
31. ...
32. ...
33. ...
34. ...
35. ...
36. ...
37. ...
38. ...
39. ...
40. ...
41. ...
42. ...
43. ...
44. ...
45. ...
46. ...
47. ...
48. ...
49. ...
50. ...
51. ...
52. ...
53. ...
54. ...
55. ...
56. ...
57. ...
58. ...
59. ...
60. ...
61. ...
62. ...
63. ...
64. ...
65. ...
66. ...
67. ...
68. ...
69. ...
70. ...
71. ...
72. ...
73. ...
74. ...
75. ...
76. ...
77. ...
78. ...
79. ...
80. ...
81. ...
82. ...
83. ...
84. ...
85. ...
86. ...
87. ...
88. ...
89. ...
90. ...
91. ...
92. ...
93. ...
94. ...
95. ...
96. ...
97. ...
98. ...
99. ...
100. ...



$n$  unknowns  $u_{i,xy}$ . Since the determinant of this system  $|a_{ik}|$ , does not vanish over the domain in question, we may solve the system to obtain explicitly

$$(4.7) \quad u_{i,xy} = f_i(x, y; u_j; u_{j,x}, u_{j,y}), \quad (i = 1, \dots, n).$$

Under hypothesis 1) alone, the  $f_i$  are continuous and partially Lipschitzian over any bounded domain in the  $3n + 2$  dimensional  $(x, y; u_j; u_{j,x}, u_{j,y})$ -space where  $(x, y; u_j) \in D$ . If hypothesis 2) also applies, the  $f_i$  are "fully" Lipschitzian over any such domain.

Consider Theorems 6 and 6a. The characteristic initial conditions imposed therein, coupled with the system (4.7), form a problem of the type considered in Theorems 3 and 3a, respectively. (Chapter 2). We have shown above that any solution of a canonical hyperbolic system is also a solution of a particular system of type (4.7). If we now demonstrate the converse for characteristic initial conditions, i.e. that any solution of the derived system (4.7) is also a solution of the original system (4.2), then Theorems 6 and 6a follow directly from Theorems 3 and 3a respectively.

Suppose we have a set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$  as a solution of (4.7) over a certain domain including the initial characteristics. By (4.5) and (4.6), which are merely alternative forms of (4.7), we have

...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...

...the ... of ...

...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...

...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...

...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...

...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...

...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...  
...the ... of ...

$$(4.8) \quad \begin{cases} A_{i,y}(x,y) = 0 & , \quad (i = 1, \dots, m < n) \\ B_{i,x}(x,y) = 0 & , \quad (i = m+1, \dots, n) \end{cases}$$

over this domain. But, by (4.3) and (4.4) of hypothesis 3) to both Theorems 6 and 6a, we have that

$$(4.9) \quad \begin{cases} A_1(x,0) = 0 & , \quad (i = 1, \dots, m < n) \\ B_1(0,y) = 0 & , \quad (i = m+1, \dots, n), \end{cases}$$

whence

$$\begin{aligned} A_1(x,y) &\equiv 0 & , \quad (i = 1, \dots, m < n), \\ B_1(x,y) &\equiv 0 & , \quad (i = m+1, \dots, n), \end{aligned}$$

throughout the domain. Hence the converse is shown.

For the Cauchy problem considered in Theorems 7 and 7a, we observe first that we can determine  $u_{i,x}(x(\tau), y(\tau))$  and  $u_{i,y}(x(\tau), y(\tau))$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$ , as functions continuous for each  $\tau \in [0, 1]$ , solely from the prescription of  $u_i(x(\tau), y(\tau)) = U_i(\tau)$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$ , and the requirement that the canonical hyperbolic system (4.2) must be satisfied at each point of  $\gamma$ . For, since  $\dot{x} + \dot{y}^2 \neq 0$  along  $\gamma$ , we may write the strip conditions

$$(4.10) \quad \dot{u}_1 = p_1 \dot{x} + q_1 \dot{y}, \quad (i = 1, \dots, n),$$

as one of

$$(4.11) \quad q_1 = \frac{1}{\dot{y}} (\dot{u}_1 - p_1 \dot{x}) \quad \text{or} \quad p_1 = \frac{1}{\dot{x}} (\dot{u}_1 - q_1 \dot{y}), \quad (i = 1, \dots, n).$$

Consider a particular point  $P \in \gamma$  where  $\dot{y} \neq 0$ . Here we substitute  $q_1 = u_{1,y} = \frac{1}{\dot{y}} (\dot{u}_1 - p_1 \dot{x})$  into equations  $B_1(\tau) = 0$ ,  $(i = m+1, \dots, n)$ . These, together with the equations  $A_1(\tau) = 0$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, m < n)$ ,

[illegible]

form a linear algebraic system in the  $p_i = u_{i,x}(P)$  with determinant  $|a_{ik}| \neq 0$ . Thus the  $p_i$  are uniquely determined at  $P$ , and, by (4.11), the  $q_i$  as well are uniquely determined at  $P$ . If  $\dot{y} = 0$  at  $P$ , then  $\dot{x} \neq 0$  there and a similar argument applies utilizing  $p_i = \frac{1}{\dot{x}} (\dot{q}_i - q_i \dot{y})$ .

Thus we have, in effect, prescribed all three sets  $u_i, u_{i,x}, u_{i,y}$ , ( $i = 1, \dots, n$ ), along  $\gamma$  once the  $u_i$  are prescribed along  $\gamma$  and the  $u_{i,x}$  and the  $u_{i,y}$  are merely required to satisfy the strip conditions (4.10) and the canonical hyperbolic system at (4.2) at each point of  $\gamma$ .

Suppose we have a set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$  as a solution of

(4.7)  $u_{i,xy} = f_i(x, y; u_j; u_{j,x}, u_{j,y})$ , ( $i = 1, \dots, n$ ) in a neighborhood of the initial curve  $\gamma$  and taking, with their first derivatives, precisely the above determined values at each point of  $\gamma$ . Then by (4.5) and (4.6), the fact that these functions and their first derivatives satisfy the canonical hyperbolic system (4.2) at each point of  $\gamma$  implies further that the system (4.2) corresponding to (4.7) is satisfied everywhere in the neighborhood in question.

With hypothesis 2) imposed, system (4.7) and the initial data on  $\gamma$  satisfy the hypotheses of Theorem 5, while without hypothesis 2), system (4.7) and the initial data on  $\gamma$  satisfy the hypotheses of Theorem 5a. But since we have shown above that each solution of (4.7) is a solution of the corresponding canonical

From a letter dated 1891  
received from the  
of the  
of the  
of the

of the  
of the  
of the  
of the  
of the

of the  
of the  
of the  
of the  
of the

of the  
of the  
of the  
of the  
of the

hyperbolic system (4.2), we have that Theorem 7 is a consequence of Theorem 5, while Theorem 7a is a consequence of Theorem 5a.

In these four theorems we are unable to prescribe the domain of definition of the functions

$$f_i(x, y; u_j; p_j, q_j), \quad (i = 1, \dots, n),$$

in such a way as to insure existence of a solution throughout

$$R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}. \quad \text{This is because the } f_i \text{ are continuous for}$$

all  $p_j$  and  $q_j$ , ( $j = 1, \dots, n$ ), but may turn out to be bounded only when these variables are restricted to finite domains. The following example demonstrates why the existence of solutions can be found only "in the small".

Example 3. Consider the characteristic initial value problem for the system

$$\begin{aligned} u_{1,xy} &= u_{1,x}^2, & u_1(x, -1) &= x, & u_1(0, y) &= 0 \\ u_{2,xy} &= 0, & u_2(x, -1) &= 0, & u_2(0, y) &= 0 \\ &\vdots & & \vdots & & \\ u_{n,xy} &= 0, & u_n(x, -1) &= 0, & u_n(0, y) &= 0. \end{aligned}$$

By quadratures, we obtain the solution  $u_1(x, y) = \frac{-x}{y}$ , while  $u_2 = \dots = u_n = 0$ , quite obviously. The  $f_i$  corresponding to this problem possess derivatives of all orders for all values of all variables. However,  $f_1 = u_{1,x}^2$  becomes unbounded as the argument  $u_{1,x}$  increases indefinitely in absolute value. We note that, despite the specification of initial data everywhere along the

... ..  
... ..  
... ..

... ..  
... ..

... ..  
... ..  
... ..

... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..

... ..  
... ..  
... ..



intersecting characteristics  $x = 0$  and  $y = -1$ , the first function in the solution, namely  $u_1$ , has a discontinuity across the line  $y = 0$ . Hence this example typifies those cases for which solutions exist "in the small" only.

We note that Remark d) of Chapter III applies as well to hypothesis 5) of Theorems 7 and 7a. The statement is that

$\gamma: \begin{cases} x = x(\tau) \\ y = y(\tau) \end{cases}$  for  $\tau \in [0, 1]$  need only have  $x(\tau)$  and

$y(\tau) \in C^1([0, 1])$ , monotone, and with  $\dot{x}^2 + \dot{y}^2 \neq 0$  at each point of  $\gamma$ . In fact, the argument in the proof above applies directly to this statement.



## CHAPTER V.

The Cauchy Problem for  $F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0$ .

In this chapter we concern ourselves with the Cauchy problem for the general non-linear second order partial differential equation in the hyperbolic domain. Specifically, the problem is to determine an integral surface of the equation

$$(1.1) \quad F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0$$

such that the hyperbolic condition

$$(1.3) \quad F_s^2 - 4 F_r F_t > 0$$

is satisfied thereon; moreover, the integral surface must have a second order contact with a given second order strip which is nowhere a characteristic strip.

In his celebrated paper [10], H. LEWY successfully attacks this problem by reducing equation (1.1) to a system of first order partial differential equations for the unknowns  $x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t$  as functions of the parameters  $\lambda$  and  $\mu$  of the two families of characteristics on the integral surface in question. LEWY's existence proof for the system is based on a finite difference argument. However, the system is of canonical hyperbolic form and the theorem of M. CINQUINI-CIERARIO, Theorem 7 of Chapter IV, is immediately applicable and insures existence and uniqueness of the solution in a sufficiently small neighborhood of the initial strip. Moreover, as demonstrated below, Theorem 7a may be used to effect an improvement on LEWY's work.

We present simultaneously LEWY's original theorem and our

1945

1. The first part of the report is devoted to a general survey of the situation in the country.

2. The second part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the economic situation in the country.

3. The third part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the political situation in the country.

4. The fourth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the social situation in the country.

5. The fifth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the cultural situation in the country.

6. The sixth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the international situation in the country.

7. The seventh part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the military situation in the country.

8. The eighth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the diplomatic situation in the country.

9. The ninth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the foreign trade situation in the country.

10. The tenth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the foreign relations situation in the country.

11. The eleventh part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the foreign policy situation in the country.

12. The twelfth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the foreign aid situation in the country.

13. The thirteenth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the foreign investment situation in the country.

14. The fourteenth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the foreign currency situation in the country.

15. The fifteenth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the foreign exchange situation in the country.

16. The sixteenth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the foreign trade balance situation in the country.

17. The seventeenth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the foreign trade deficit situation in the country.

18. The eighteenth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the foreign trade surplus situation in the country.

19. The nineteenth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the foreign trade turnover situation in the country.

20. The twentieth part of the report is devoted to a detailed analysis of the foreign trade volume situation in the country.

improvement on it. LZWY's theorem is obtained by omitting the parentheses. Our theorem is obtained by replacing the under-scored statements by the corresponding ones in the parentheses.

Theorem 8 (8a)

$$1) \quad S^2: \begin{cases} x = x(\tau) \\ y = y(\tau) \\ u = u(\tau) \\ p = p(\tau) \\ q = q(\tau) \\ r = r(\tau) \\ s = s(\tau) \\ t = t(\tau) \end{cases} \quad \text{for } \tau \in [0,1] \text{ is a nowhere character-} \\ \text{istic second order strip,}$$

i.e.  $x, y, u, p, q, r, s, t(\tau) \in C^1([0,1])$ , and for each  $\tau \in [0,1]$ ,

- i)  $\dot{x}^2 + \dot{y}^2 \neq 0$ ,
- ii)  $F_r \dot{y}^2 - F_s \dot{y} \dot{x} + F_t \dot{x}^2 \neq 0$ ,
- iii)  $F_s^2 - 4 F_r F_t > 0$ ,
- iv)  $F(x(\tau), y(\tau); u(\tau); p(\tau), q(\tau); r(\tau), s(\tau), t(\tau)) = 0$ .

2)  $F \in C^{(1)}(\in C^n)$  in a certain neighborhood of  $S^2$ .

3) There exists one and only one (at least one) integral surface  $J: u = u(x, y)$  of the equation  $F(x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t) = 0$  such that  $u(x, y) \in C^{(1)}$  in a sufficiently small neighborhood of the base curve  $\gamma: \begin{cases} x = x(\tau) \\ y = y(\tau) \end{cases}$  for  $\tau \in [0,1]$ , and such that  $J: u = u(x, y)$  has a second order contact with the strip  $S^2$ .

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO  
LIBRARY  
1000 S. MICHIGAN AVE.  
CHICAGO, ILL. 60607

RECEIVED

APR 10 1964

LIBRARY

OF

CHICAGO

UNIVERSITY

OF

CHICAGO

LIBRARY

OF

CHICAGO

UNIVERSITY

OF

CHICAGO

LIBRARY

OF

CHICAGO

UNIVERSITY

OF

CHICAGO

LIBRARY

OF

CHICAGO

UNIVERSITY

OF

CHICAGO

Proof

We first demonstrate that any solution of the above problem, together with its derivatives of the first and second orders, represents a solution of a particular canonical hyperbolic system under the same boundary conditions.

We assume that  $P_r \neq 0$  and  $P_t \neq 0$  in the domains considered in the following argument. This may be done without loss of generality. For, by Definition 1a, a characteristic base curve must satisfy

$$(1.5) \quad \begin{aligned} 1) \quad & P_r \dot{y}^2 - P_s \dot{y} \dot{x} + P_t \dot{x}^2 = 0, \\ 2) \quad & \dot{x}^2 + \dot{y}^2 \neq 0. \end{aligned}$$

Suppose at a point of  $S^2$  that  $P_r = 0$ . Then  $\dot{x} = 0$  represents the vertical tangent taken by one of the characteristic base curves through the projection of this point onto the  $xy$  plane. Conversely, if one of the characteristic base curves through a point in the projection of  $S^2$  has a vertical tangent, then  $\dot{x} = 0$  there and, consequently,  $P_r = 0$  at the corresponding point on  $S^2$ . Likewise,  $P_t = 0$  if and only if  $\dot{y} = 0$ , in the sense above. Thus, by a suitable coordinate rotation in the  $xy$  plane, we may insure that  $P_r \neq 0$  and  $P_t \neq 0$  in a neighborhood of the point in question on  $S^2$ . Granting that this is a local property only and that the particular rotation performed may introduce values of  $P_r = 0$  or  $P_t = 0$  at some other sufficiently distant points on  $S^2$ , we observe that this local property is sufficient because our proof is ultimately based upon Theorems 4 and 4a of Chapter I. In those





theorems the integral equation statement of the problem made it plainly evident that the value of the integral at any point  $P$  depended only upon the portion of the initial curve cut off by the two characteristics intersecting at  $P$ . Consequently, we may consider the arguments below as applying in succession to small overlapping segments of  $S^2$ , with coordinate axes rotated suitably for each segment considered. (See also R. COURANT - D. HILBERT [17] p. 323 and p. 332.)

Let us assume that we have an integral surface  $J: u = u(x, y)$  satisfying the conditions of either Theorem 8 or Theorem 8a. Then by (1.5) we conclude that the related characteristic base curves are the two one-parameter families of curves determined by the equations

$$(5.1) \quad y_\lambda = \rho_1 x_\lambda,$$

$$(5.2) \quad y_\mu = \rho_2 x_\mu,$$

where

$$(5.3) \quad \rho_1 = \frac{p_s + \sqrt{p_s^2 - 4 p_r p_t}}{2 p_r},$$

$$(5.4) \quad \rho_2 = \frac{p_s - \sqrt{p_s^2 - 4 p_r p_t}}{2 p_r}.$$

$\rho_1$  and  $\rho_2$  are functions of the variables  $x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t$  and  $\rho_1 \neq \rho_2$  in a neighborhood of  $S^2$  by the hyperbolic condition (1.3).

Consider the coordinate transformation

$$(5.5) \quad \begin{aligned} x &= x(\lambda, \mu) \\ y &= y(\lambda, \mu) \end{aligned}$$

2. *Phragmites* (common in the marshes of the lower Mississippi River and in the coastal marshes of the Gulf of Mexico).

The Jacobian of this transformation,

$$(5.6) \quad y_{\lambda} x_{\mu} - y_{\mu} x_{\lambda} = (\rho_1 - \rho_2) x_{\lambda} x_{\mu},$$

does not vanish in a vicinity of the projection of  $s^2$ . This follows since  $\rho_1 \neq \rho_2$ ; while  $x_{\lambda} = 0$  would, by (5.1), imply  $y_{\lambda} = 0$ , contradicting the requirement  $\dot{x}^2 + \dot{y}^2 \neq 0$ , (similarly for  $x_{\mu}$ ). Hence the inverse transformation,

$$(5.7) \quad \begin{cases} \lambda = \lambda(x, y) \\ \mu = \mu(x, y) \end{cases},$$

exists in a vicinity of the projection of  $s^2$ .

Along the characteristics on  $J: u=u(x, y)$  certain additional equations must be satisfied. These are determined as follows:

Since  $F \in C^{(1)}(\in C^{(1)})$  and  $u \in C^{(1)}$ , we obtain by differentiation

$$(5.8) \quad \begin{cases} F_r r_x + F_s s_x + F_t t_x = - [F]_x \\ x_{\lambda} r_x + y_{\lambda} s_x = r_{\lambda} \\ x_{\lambda} s_x + y_{\lambda} t_x = s_{\lambda}, \end{cases}$$

where

$$(5.9) \quad [F]_x = p^2 r + q^2 s + F_u u + F_x.$$

similarly,

$$(5.10) \quad \begin{cases} F_r r_y + F_s s_y + F_t t_y = - [F]_y \\ x_{\lambda} r_y + y_{\lambda} s_y = s_{\lambda} \\ x_{\lambda} s_y + y_{\lambda} t_y = t_{\lambda}, \end{cases}$$

where

The following is a list of the names of the

persons who have been named in the

report of the committee on the

subject of the

report of the committee on the

subject of the

report of the

report of the

report of the

report of the

report of the

report of the

$$(5.11) \quad [F]_y = F_p s + F_q t + F_u q + F_y.$$

Since  $\lambda$  is the parameter for one family of characteristic curves and, consequently, is the path parameter along each of the curves of the other family, the determinant

$$(5.12) \quad \begin{vmatrix} F_r & F_s & F_t \\ x_\lambda & y_\lambda & 0 \\ 0 & x_\lambda & y_\lambda \end{vmatrix} = F_r y_\lambda^2 - F_s y_\lambda x_\lambda - F_t x_\lambda^2 = 0.$$

Hence the quantities on the right-hand side in each of the systems (5.8) and (5.10) must be linearly dependent, i.e. in each system the augmented matrix of coefficients must be of rank less than three. Consequently,

$$(5.13) \quad \begin{vmatrix} F_r & F_t & [F]_x \\ x_\lambda & 0 & -r_\lambda \\ 0 & y_\lambda & -s_\lambda \end{vmatrix} = F_r r_\lambda y_\lambda + F_t s_\lambda x_\lambda + [F]_x x_\lambda y_\lambda = 0.$$

Recalling the assumption made without loss,

$$x_\lambda = \frac{1}{\rho_1} y_\lambda \quad \text{and} \quad y_\lambda \neq 0, \quad \text{equation (5.13) reduces to}$$

$$(5.14) \quad F_r r_\lambda + \frac{1}{\rho_1} F_t s_\lambda + [F]_x x_\lambda = 0.$$

Likewise, from (5.10) we obtain the linear dependence of the right-hand terms in the form

$$(5.15) \quad \rho_1 F_r s_\lambda + F_t t_\lambda + [F]_y y_\lambda = 0.$$

Along the curves of the other family of characteristics the following relations must be satisfied. These are obtained in a



fashion completely analogous to that used in obtaining (5.14) and (5.15):

$$(5.16) \quad P_r r_\mu + \frac{1}{\rho_2} P_t s_\mu + [P]_x x_\mu = 0$$

$$(5.17) \quad \rho_2 P_r s_\mu + P_t t_\mu + [P]_y y_\mu = 0.$$

In addition, the strip conditions

$$(1.8) \quad \dot{u} = p \dot{x} + q \dot{y}$$

$$(1.9) \quad \begin{cases} \dot{p} = r \dot{x} + s \dot{y} \\ \dot{q} = s \dot{x} + t \dot{y} \end{cases}$$

must be satisfied along any curve lying on  $J$ :  $u=u(x,y)$ . In particular, they must be satisfied along any characteristic on  $J$ .

From equations (5.1), (5.2), (5.14) through (5.17), (1.8) and (1.9) we obtain the following system of "characteristic equations" i.e. equations which must be satisfied along the characteristics on any integral surface  $J$ :

$$(5.18) \quad \left. \begin{aligned} \varphi_1 &= y_\lambda - \rho_1 x_\lambda = 0 \\ \varphi_2 &= P_r r_\lambda + \frac{1}{\rho_1} P_t s_\lambda + [P]_x x_\lambda = 0 \\ \varphi_3 &= \rho_1 P_r s_\lambda + P_t t_\lambda + [P]_y y_\lambda = 0 \\ \varphi_4 &= u_\lambda - p x_\lambda - q y_\lambda = 0 \\ \varphi_5 &= p_\lambda - r x_\lambda - s y_\lambda = 0 \\ \varphi_6 &= q_\lambda - s x_\lambda - t y_\lambda = 0 \end{aligned} \right\} \text{System A}$$
  

$$\left. \begin{aligned} \psi_1 &= y_\mu - \rho_2 x_\mu = 0 \\ \psi_2 &= P_r r_\mu + \frac{1}{\rho_2} P_t s_\mu + [P]_x x_\mu = 0 \end{aligned} \right\}$$

Section 101 of the Act

(101)

Section 102 of the Act

(102)

Section 103 of the Act

(103)

(104)

(105)

(106)

(107)

(108)

(109)

(110)

(111)

(112)

(113)

(114)

(115)

(116)

(117)

(118)

(119)



$$\begin{array}{lcl}
 (5.18) & \psi_3 = \rho_2 F_r \mu + F_t \mu + [F]_y y_\mu = 0 & \\
 \text{(continued)} & \psi_4 = u_\mu - p x_\mu - q y_\mu = 0 & \\
 & \psi_5 = p_\mu - r x_\mu - s y_\mu = 0 & \\
 & \psi_6 = q_\mu - s x_\mu - t y_\mu = 0 & 
 \end{array} \left. \vphantom{\begin{array}{l} \psi_3 \\ \psi_4 \\ \psi_5 \\ \psi_6 \end{array}} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{System} \\ B \end{array} \quad 61$$

We observe that System A of (5.18) is of canonical hyperbolic form in  $x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t$  as functions of  $\lambda$  and  $\mu$ . Since for Theorem 8,  $F \in C'''$ , while for Theorem 8a,  $F \in C''$ , the coefficients of all equations in (5.18) are functions of class  $C''$  for Theorem 8, and of class  $C'$  for Theorem 8a. Moreover, the determinant of the matrix of coefficients for System A, is, after interchange of rows and columns,

$$\begin{array}{l}
 (5.19) \quad \left| \begin{array}{cccccccc}
 -\rho_1 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 -\rho_2 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 * & 0 & F_r & \frac{1}{\rho_1} F_t & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 0 & * & 0 & \rho_1 F_r & F_t & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 * & 0 & F_r & \frac{1}{\rho_2} F_t & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 * & * & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
 * & * & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
 * & * & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
 \end{array} \right| \\
 = F_r F_t^2 \cdot \frac{(\rho_1 - \rho_2)^2}{\rho_1 \rho_2},
 \end{array}$$

where the coefficients designated only by asterisks, \*, do not contribute to the value of the determinant. Since  $F_r \neq 0$ ,  $F_t \neq 0$  and  $\rho_1 \neq \rho_2$  in a neighborhood of  $S^2$ , the determinant (5.19) does not vanish therein. Hence any solution  $J: u=u(x, y)$  of the problem of Theorem 8, together with its first and second derivatives,



satisfies the hypotheses for Theorem 7; because the requirement that  $F \in C'''$  is certainly sufficient to insure that the first derivatives of the coefficients of System A be Lipschitzian with respect to variables  $x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t$ . Moreover, the requirement in Theorem 8a that  $F \in C'$  insures that the coefficients of System A are of class  $C'$ , as demanded by Theorem 7a.

In the  $\lambda\mu$ , or characteristic, plane, the initial base curve has the parametric form

$$\gamma: \begin{cases} \lambda = \lambda(x(\tau), y(\tau)) & \text{for } \tau \in [0, 1], \\ \mu = \mu(x(\tau), y(\tau)) \end{cases}$$

and is nowhere parallel to either the  $\lambda$  or  $\mu$  axes. Consequently,

$\gamma$  may be expressed in the non-parametric form

$$\lambda = \varphi(\mu)$$

where  $\varphi(\mu) \in C'$  and  $\varphi'(\mu) \neq 0$ . If we introduce  $\lambda' = \lambda$  and  $\mu' = -\varphi(\mu)$  as new characteristic parameters, we observe that equations (5.18) remain unaltered in form. Hence we may assume, without loss, that the initial base curve  $\gamma$  has the representation

$$(5.20) \quad \lambda + \mu = 0$$

in the  $\lambda\mu$  plane.

We now demonstrate that any solution of System A satisfying the given Cauchy initial conditions is also a solution of the problem of Theorems 8 and 8a. This done, Theorems 8 and 8a are immediate consequences of Theorems 7 and 7a, respectively.

Following J. HADAMARD [11] p. 504, we show that for each set of functions satisfying System A and the initial conditions on

1990年12月15日

$\lambda + \mu = 0$ , the System B is likewise satisfied. Note that in this part of the argument we cannot admit that  $p, q, r, s$  and  $t$  are derivatives of  $u$ . This is now a matter of proof.

Differentiating  $F(x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t)$  by  $\lambda$  and observing equations (5.18), we obtain

$$(5.21) \quad \frac{dF}{d\lambda} = \varphi_2 + \varphi_3 + F_u \varphi_4 + F_p \varphi_5 + F_q \varphi_6.$$

Hence  $\frac{dF}{d\lambda} = 0$  for each set of functions satisfying System A. However, by hypothesis,  $F = 0$  along  $\lambda + \mu = 0$ . Thus  $F \equiv 0$  throughout that region where the set of functions satisfying System A is defined. This in turn implies that

$$(5.22) \quad \frac{dF}{d\mu} = \psi_2 + \psi_3 + F_u \psi_4 + F_p \psi_5 + F_q \psi_6 = 0 \text{ throughout the same region. By hypothesis, } \psi_2 = 0 \text{ in this region, hence}$$

$$(5.23) \quad \psi_3 = -F_u \psi_4 - F_p \psi_5 - F_q \psi_6$$

therein.

Since  $\rho_1 \rho_2 = \frac{F_t}{F_r}$ , we obtain from (5.18) by simple algebraic

operations

$$(5.24) \quad \frac{\rho_1 y_\mu}{F_t} \varphi_2 = r_\lambda x_\mu + s_\lambda y_\mu + H,$$

$$(5.25) \quad \frac{\rho_2 y_\lambda}{F_t} \psi_2 = r_\mu x_\lambda + s_\mu y_\lambda + H,$$

where

$$(5.26) \quad H = \frac{F_\lambda y_\mu}{F_t} [r]_\lambda = \frac{F_\lambda F_\mu}{F_r} [r]_\lambda;$$

$$(5.27) \quad \frac{y_\mu}{L} \varphi_2 = s_\lambda x_\mu + t_\lambda y_\mu + H.$$

1. The first part of the paper is devoted to a study of the

properties of the function  $f(x)$  defined by the equation

$f(x) = \int_0^x f(t) dt$  for  $x \in [0, 1]$ .

It is shown that  $f(x)$  is a continuous function on  $[0, 1]$ .

Moreover, it is proved that  $f(x)$  is differentiable at  $x=0$ .

2. In the second part of the paper, we consider the problem of

finding the maximum value of the function  $f(x)$  on the interval  $[0, 1]$ .

It is shown that the maximum value of  $f(x)$  is attained at  $x=0$ .

3. Finally, we mention that the results of this paper are

valid for any continuous function  $f(x)$  on  $[0, 1]$ .

4. The author wishes to express his gratitude to the

referees for their valuable comments and suggestions.

5. The author also wishes to thank the

editor for his kind attention to this paper.

$$(5.28) \quad \frac{y_\lambda}{F_t} \psi_3 = s_\mu x_\lambda + t_\mu y_\lambda + K,$$

where

$$(5.29) \quad K = \frac{y_\lambda y_\mu}{F_t} [F]_y = \frac{x_\lambda x_\mu}{F_r} [F]_y.$$

By Theorem 7 or Theorem 7a, the functions of the set satisfying System A and the Cauchy initial data are continuously differentiable and possess continuous mixed second derivatives. Thus we may perform the differentiations in the following relations:

$$(5.30) \quad \begin{aligned} \psi_{4,\lambda} - \psi_{4,\mu} &= p_\lambda x_\mu + q_\lambda y_\mu - p_\mu x_\lambda - q_\mu y_\lambda \\ &= \psi_{5x_\mu} - \psi_{6y_\mu} - \psi_{5x_\lambda} - \psi_{6y_\lambda}; \end{aligned}$$

$$(5.31) \quad \begin{aligned} \psi_{5,\lambda} - \psi_{5,\mu} &= r_\lambda x_\mu + s_\lambda y_\mu - r_\mu x_\lambda - s_\mu y_\lambda \\ &= \frac{p_1 y_\mu}{F_t} \psi_2 - \frac{p_2 y_\lambda}{F_t} \psi_2, \end{aligned}$$

by (5.24) and (5.25) above;

$$(5.32) \quad \begin{aligned} \psi_{6,\lambda} - \psi_{6,\mu} &= s_\mu x_\lambda + t_\mu y_\lambda - s_\lambda x_\mu - t_\lambda y_\mu \\ &= \frac{y_\lambda}{F_t} \psi_3 - \frac{y_\mu}{F_t} \psi_3, \end{aligned}$$

by (5.27) and (5.28) above. But System A is satisfied, hence (5.30), (5.31) and (5.32), by virtue of (5.23), reduce to

$$(5.33) \quad \begin{cases} \psi_{4,\lambda} = -\psi_{5x_\lambda} - \psi_{6y_\lambda} \\ \psi_{5,\lambda} = 0 \\ \psi_{6,\lambda} = \frac{-y_\lambda}{F_t} (F_u \psi_4 + F_p \psi_5 + F_q \psi_6). \end{cases}$$

$$\lambda^2 \psi'' + \lambda^2 \psi' + \lambda^2 \psi = 0 \quad (2.2)$$

where

$$\lambda = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\epsilon} + \frac{1}{\eta} \right) \quad (2.3)$$

is the characteristic length of the system,  $\epsilon$  is the permittivity of the medium, and  $\eta$  is the viscosity of the medium. The characteristic length of the system is defined as the length scale at which the electric and magnetic fields are of the same order of magnitude. The characteristic length of the system is defined as the length scale at which the electric and magnetic fields are of the same order of magnitude.

$$\lambda = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\epsilon} + \frac{1}{\eta} \right) \quad (2.4)$$

$$\lambda = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\epsilon} + \frac{1}{\eta} \right) \quad (2.5)$$



In (5.33) all functions are known except  $\psi_4, \psi_5, \psi_6$  and their derivatives with respect to  $\lambda$ . Moreover, along  $\lambda = -\mu$  System B is satisfied, i.e.  $\psi_4 = \psi_5 = \psi_6 = 0$  for  $\lambda = -\mu$ . For fixed  $\mu$  we may consider (5.33) as a homogeneous system of linear first order ordinary differential equations under homogeneous onepoint boundary conditions. This system has the unique solution

$$\psi_4 = \psi_5 = \psi_6 = 0$$

throughout the region of definition of the set of functions satisfying System A. By (5.23),  $\psi_3 = 0$  also, and the System B is shown to be dependent upon the System A in the sense above.

From the functions  $x = x(\lambda, \mu)$ ,  $y = y(\lambda, \mu)$  of the set satisfying System A, we may form the inverse functions  $\lambda = \lambda(x, y)$ ,  $\mu = \mu(x, y)$ , since the Jacobian

$$(5.6) \quad y_\lambda x_\mu - y_\mu x_\lambda = (\rho_1 - \rho_2) x_\lambda x_\mu$$

does not vanish. Hence we may express the function  $u = u(\lambda, \mu)$  as a function of the independent variables  $x$  and  $y$ .

We now need to show only that

$$(5.34) \quad p = u_x, \quad q = u_y, \quad r = u_{xx}, \quad s = u_{xy} \quad \text{and} \quad t = u_{yy}$$

throughout the above region to complete the proof.

$$\text{Now} \quad \varphi_4 = u_\lambda - p x_\lambda - q y_\lambda = 0$$

$$\psi_4 = u_\mu - p x_\mu - q y_\mu = 0,$$

while the determinant of this linear system is the Jacobian (5.6) and hence does not vanish. Thus there exists a unique solution.

In (2.1) the function  $f$  is assumed to be continuous and

its derivative  $f'$  is assumed to be continuous and

to satisfy the condition  $f'(x) \neq 0$  for all  $x$  in  $[a, b]$ .

For fixed  $x$  in  $[a, b]$  we consider the function

$$F(t) = f(x + t(y - x))$$

which is a function of  $t$  in the interval  $[0, 1]$ .

Then

$$F(1) - F(0) = \int_0^1 F'(t) dt$$

and by the Mean Value Theorem there exists a  $\theta$  in  $(0, 1)$  such that

$$F(1) - F(0) = F'(\theta)(1 - 0) = f'(x + \theta(y - x))$$

which is the desired result.  $\square$

It is clear that the above proof is valid for any function  $f$  which is

continuous on  $[a, b]$  and differentiable on  $(a, b)$ .

Example 1. Let  $f(x) = x^2$ . Then

$$f(b) - f(a) = b^2 - a^2 = (b + a)(b - a)$$

$$= (b + a) \int_a^b 2x dx$$

$$= (b + a) \int_a^b f'(x) dx$$

$$= (b + a) (f(b) - f(a))$$

$$= (b + a) (b^2 - a^2)$$

$$= (b + a) (b + a)(b - a)$$

$$= (b + a)^2 (b - a)$$

$$= (b + a) \int_a^b 2x dx$$

$$= (b + a) (f(b) - f(a))$$

$$= (b + a) (b^2 - a^2)$$

$$= (b + a) (b + a)(b - a)$$

$$= (b + a)^2 (b - a)$$

20. W. M. WHYBURN, "Over and under functions as related to differential equations," American Mathematical Monthly, vol. 47 (1940), pp. 1-10.

1. The first part of the report is a general statement of the purpose and scope of the study.

2. The second part of the report is a description of the methods used in the study.

3. The third part of the report is a discussion of the results of the study.

But  $p = u_x$ ,  $q = u_y$  obviously satisfies and hence represents the unique solution.

Similarly,

$$\varphi_\delta = u_{x,\lambda} - rx_\lambda - sy_\lambda = 0$$

$$\psi_\delta = u_{x,\mu} - rx_\mu - sy_\mu = 0,$$

hence  $r = u_{xx}$  and  $s = u_{xy}$ ;

$$\varphi_\delta = u_{y,\lambda} - sx_\lambda - ty_\lambda = 0$$

$$\psi_\delta = u_{y,\mu} - sx_\mu - ty_\mu = 0,$$

hence  $t = u_{yy}$  and  $u_{yx} = u_{xy} = s$ . The proof is now complete.

Let  $f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$  and  $g(x) = x^2 - 2x + 1$ . Then  $f(x) + g(x) = 2x^2 + 2$  and  $f(x) - g(x) = 4x$ .

Therefore,  $f(x) + g(x) = 2x^2 + 2$  and  $f(x) - g(x) = 4x$ .

Thus,  $f(x) + g(x) = 2x^2 + 2$  and  $f(x) - g(x) = 4x$ .

$$\begin{aligned} f(x) + g(x) &= x^2 + 2x + 1 + x^2 - 2x + 1 \\ &= 2x^2 + 2 \end{aligned}$$

$$f(x) - g(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1 - (x^2 - 2x + 1) = 4x$$

$$f(x) + g(x) = 2x^2 + 2$$

$$f(x) - g(x) = 4x$$

Therefore,  $f(x) + g(x) = 2x^2 + 2$  and  $f(x) - g(x) = 4x$ .

## CHAPTER VI

## The Characteristic Initial Value Problem for

$$F(x,y;u;p,q; r,s,t) = 0.$$

The whole idea of a characteristic initial value problem for the equation

$$(1.1) \quad F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0$$

appears paradoxical at first glance. In the Cauchy problem the prescribed initial data was sufficient to determine whether or not the projection of the initial curve was characteristic. In this problem, however, we merely prescribe two intersecting space curves through which an integral surface of the equation (1.1) must pass. Since the characteristics are, in general, dependent on the integral surface in question, it would appear impossible to determine, a priori, whether or not the prescribed initial curves have characteristic projections.

That such is not the case is demonstrated by M. CINQUINI-CIBRARIO [13]. In this paper she treats the characteristic initial value problem as a special case of the more general Coursat problem, i.e. where two arbitrary intersecting space curves are prescribed through which an integral surface of (1.1) must pass. Commencing on p. 220, she gives the necessary and sufficient conditions that these curves be characteristic to any integral surface passing through them. We call curves satisfying these conditions "intrinsically characteristic" curves.

1. Introduction

The purpose of this study is to investigate the effects of

the proposed system on the performance of

the system in terms of accuracy and speed.

The results of the study are as follows:

1. The proposed system improves the accuracy of the

system by a factor of 1.5.

2. The proposed system reduces the execution time of the

system by a factor of 2.0.

3. The proposed system improves the overall performance of the

system by a factor of 1.5.

4. The proposed system improves the reliability of the

system by a factor of 1.5.

5. The proposed system improves the maintainability of the



In this chapter we examine her development, for the particular case of the characteristic initial value problem, up to the point where a modified form of the system of characteristic equations (5.18) and the above necessary and sufficient conditions are obtained. There are two important differences between her development and that of H. LEWY given in the preceding chapter. First, she transforms the initial curves into the coordinate axes. Since these curves are characteristic, this implies immediately that  $F_r = 0$  and  $F_t = 0$  at the origin. Thus many of the divisions performed in Chapter V are now invalidated. Second, she is able to solve (1.1) explicitly for  $s$ , obtaining

$$s = f(x, y; u; p, q; r, t)$$

and thus to reduce the number of equations in the system of characteristic equations by two.

We do not follow the remainder of her existence proof, in which she reduces the system of characteristic equations to an integral equation form and then applies successive approximations to obtain the existence of a unique solution to the general Goursat problem. Instead we deal directly with the special case of the characteristic initial value problem by a method analogous to that of Chapter V. Such an approach is indicated by M. CINQUINI-CIBRARIO, herself, [12] p.130, footnote B. She states, in effect, that the following Theorem 9 can be shown to be a consequence of Theorem 6, Chapter IV. We present this proof in detail and, in addition, we extend it to apply to the derivation of Theorem 9a as a consequence of Theorem 6a. The improvement obtained corresponds to that of



Chapter V for the Cauchy problem. Namely, the requirement that  $F \in C'''$  is reduced to require merely that  $F \in C''$  while the conclusion is altered to read "at least one solution" instead of "one and only one solution".

Theorem 9

$$1) \quad \begin{cases} \Gamma_1: \begin{cases} x_1 - \xi \leq x \leq x_1 + \xi \\ y = f_1(x) \\ u = F_1(x) \end{cases} & , \quad \begin{cases} f_1(x) \in C''([x_1 - \xi, x_1 + \xi]) \\ F_1(x) \in C''([x_1 - \xi, x_1 + \xi]) \end{cases} \\ \Gamma_2: \begin{cases} x = f_2(y) \\ y_1 - \eta \leq y \leq y_1 + \eta \\ u = F_2(y) \end{cases} & , \quad \begin{cases} f_2(y) \in C''([y_1 - \eta, y_1 + \eta]) \\ F_2(y) \in C''([y_1 - \eta, y_1 + \eta]) \end{cases} \end{cases}$$

The point  $(x_1, y_1)$  is the only point of intersection of  $\Gamma_1$  and  $\Gamma_2$  and it is interior to both curves. Moreover,  $F_1(x_1) = F_2(y_1)$  and  $f_1'(x_1)f_2'(y_1) \neq 1$ . (i.e.  $\Gamma_1$  and  $\Gamma_2$  do not have a common tangent at the point  $(x_1, y_1)$ .)

2)  $\Gamma_1$  and  $\Gamma_2$  are "intrinsically characteristic" in a neighborhood of their point of intersection, i.e. they meet the necessary and sufficient conditions, given below, that they be characteristic to any integral surface of

$$(1.1) \quad F(x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t) = 0$$

passing through them. As we shall see below, this hypothesis, together with hypothesis 1), tacitly implies that at the intersection point  $(x_1, y_1, u_1)$  of  $\Gamma_1$  and  $\Gamma_2$  the values  $p_1, q_1, r_1, s_1,$

Chapter 1: The History of Mathematics

Mathematics is a branch of science that deals with the study of numbers, shapes, and patterns.

The history of mathematics is a long and fascinating journey that spans thousands of years.

It is a testament to the human mind's ability to understand the world around us.

1.1 The Origins of Mathematics

1.2 The Development of Mathematics

1.3 The Role of Mathematics in Society

1.4 The Future of Mathematics

2.1 The Foundations of Mathematics

2.2 The Branches of Mathematics

2.3 The Importance of Mathematics

2.4 The Challenges of Mathematics

$t_1$ ), the hyperbolic condition

$$P_{s_1}^2 - 4 P_{r_1} P_{t_1} > 0,$$

is satisfied, (notation:  $P_{s_1} = P_s(x_1, y_1; u_1; p_1, q_1; r_1, s_1, t_1)$ , etc.)

3)  $P \in C'''$  in a neighborhood of the point

$$(x_1, y_1; u_1; p_1, q_1; r_1, s_1, t_1).$$

$\Rightarrow$  4) There exists one and only one integral surface  $J(u, v)(x, y)$  of  $P(x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t) = 0$ , defined and of class  $C'''$  in a sufficiently small neighborhood of the point  $(x_1, y_1)$  and passing through subarcs of  $\Gamma_1$  and  $\Gamma_2$  intersecting at the point  $(x_1, y_1, u_1)$ .

#### Theorem 9a

1)

2)

3)'  $P \in C''$  in a neighborhood of the point

$$(x_1, y_1; u_1; p_1, q_1; r_1, s_1, t_1).$$

$\Rightarrow$  4)' There exists at least one integral surface etc.  
(as in Theorem 9).

#### Proof of Theorems 9 and 9a

We first perform the coordinate transformation

$$(6.1) \quad \begin{cases} \bar{x} = x - f_2(y) \\ \bar{y} = y - f_1(x) \end{cases}$$

taking  $\Gamma_1$  into the  $\bar{x}$  axis,  $\Gamma_2$  into the  $\bar{y}$  axis and the point  $(x_1, y_1)$  into the origin. This transformation is univalent in a

the hypothesis of the

$$x^2 + y^2 = z^2$$

is satisfied, then the

conclusion is that the

the above result is a special case of the more general result that if  $x, y, z$  are integers such that  $x^2 + y^2 = z^2$ , then  $x, y, z$  are of the form  $x = m^2 - n^2$ ,  $y = 2mn$ ,  $z = m^2 + n^2$ , where  $m, n$  are coprime integers, one of which is even and the other is odd.

Q.E.D.

neighborhood of  $(x_1, y_1)$  since the Jacobian

$$(6.2) \quad 1 - f_1'(x_1)f_2'(y_1) \neq 0$$

by hypothesis 1). Geometrically, this means that  $\gamma_1$  and  $\gamma_2$  do not have a common tangent at their point of intersection.

Without loss, we may assume homogeneous initial conditions.

For, suppose we have an integral surface  $J: u(x, y)$  of equation (1.1) passing through the curves  $\Gamma_1$  and  $\Gamma_2$ . Then by the above transformation, considering (6.2),

$$(6.3) \quad u(x, y) = \bar{u}(\bar{x}(x, y), \bar{y}(x, y)),$$

and hence for any such integral surface

$$(6.4) \quad \begin{cases} P_1(x) = u(x, f_1(x)) = u(\bar{x}(x, f_1(x)), 0), \\ P_2(y) = u(f_2(y), y) = \bar{u}(0, \bar{y}(f_2(y), y)). \end{cases}$$

Letting

$$(6.5) \quad w(\bar{x}, \bar{y}) = \bar{u}(\bar{x}, \bar{y}) - \bar{u}(\bar{x}, 0) - \bar{u}(0, \bar{y}) + \bar{u}(0, 0),$$

and since, by hypothesis 1),  $f_1, f_2, P_1$  and  $P_2 \in C^1$ , we obtain

$$(6.6) \quad \begin{cases} w(\bar{x}, 0) = w_{\bar{x}}(\bar{x}, 0) = w_{\bar{x}\bar{x}}(\bar{x}, 0) = 0, \\ w(0, \bar{y}) = w_{\bar{y}}(0, \bar{y}) = w_{\bar{y}\bar{y}}(0, \bar{y}) = 0. \end{cases}$$

Thus we may reduce the problem to that of finding a function  $w = w(\bar{x}, \bar{y})$  which vanishes on the coordinate axes in a vicinity of the origin and satisfies there the transformed form of equation (1.1),

relativities of 1.7, since the ...

... ..

(8.9)

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..



$$(6.7) \quad P(\bar{x}, \bar{y}; [\bar{w} + \varepsilon]; [\bar{w} + \varepsilon], \bar{x}, [\bar{w} + \varepsilon], \bar{y}; [\bar{w} + \varepsilon], \bar{x}\bar{x}, \\ [\bar{w} + \varepsilon], \bar{x}\bar{y}, [\bar{w} + \varepsilon], \bar{y}\bar{y})$$

where

$$(6.8) \quad g(\bar{x}, \bar{y}) = \bar{u}(\bar{x}, 0) + \bar{u}(0, \bar{y}) - \bar{u}(0, 0).$$

The function  $g$  is known from the prescribed initial data.

For simplicity, we return to our original notation and state the problem in this way:

To determine the function  $u = u(x, y)$  satisfying equation (1.1) and the initial conditions

$$u(x, 0) = u(0, y) = 0,$$

where, in the notation above,

$$u_0 = p_0 = q_0 = r_0 = t_0 = 0$$

and

$$(6.9) \quad P(0, 0; 0; 0, 0; 0, s_0, 0) = 0.$$

By hypothesis 2), there exists a unique value  $s_0$  satisfying (6.9).

The characteristic base curves and, a fortiori, the hyperbolic condition are invariant under the transformation (6.1). (See R. COURANT - D. HILBERT [17] p. 204.) Moreover, the substitution  $w = \bar{u} - g$  also preserves the invariance of the equation for the characteristic base curves and the hyperbolic condition as is easily seen by differentiation of (6.7). Hence, by hypothesis 2), we have the hyperbolic condition

$$V_{\alpha\beta} = \frac{1}{2} (V_{\alpha\beta} + V_{\beta\alpha}) + \frac{1}{2} (V_{\alpha\beta} - V_{\beta\alpha}) \quad (7.9)$$

$$V_{\alpha\beta} = \frac{1}{2} (V_{\alpha\beta} + V_{\beta\alpha}) + \frac{1}{2} (V_{\alpha\beta} - V_{\beta\alpha})$$

where

$$V_{\alpha\beta} = \frac{1}{2} (V_{\alpha\beta} + V_{\beta\alpha}) + \frac{1}{2} (V_{\alpha\beta} - V_{\beta\alpha}) \quad (8.0)$$

The first term on the right-hand side of (8.0) is the symmetric part of the tensor  $V_{\alpha\beta}$ .

The second term on the right-hand side of (8.0) is the antisymmetric part of the tensor  $V_{\alpha\beta}$ .

The first term on the right-hand side of (8.0) is the symmetric part of the tensor  $V_{\alpha\beta}$ .

The second term on the right-hand side of (8.0) is the antisymmetric part of the tensor  $V_{\alpha\beta}$ .

The first term on the right-hand side of (8.0) is the symmetric part of the tensor  $V_{\alpha\beta}$ .

The second term on the right-hand side of (8.0) is the antisymmetric part of the tensor  $V_{\alpha\beta}$ .

The first term on the right-hand side of (8.0) is the symmetric part of the tensor  $V_{\alpha\beta}$ .

The second term on the right-hand side of (8.0) is the antisymmetric part of the tensor  $V_{\alpha\beta}$ .

$$(6.10) \quad P_{s_0}^2 - 4 P_{r_0} P_{t_0} > 0,$$

while the equation for the characteristic base curve directions at the origin is

$$(6.11) \quad P_{r_0} dy^2 - P_{s_0} dx dy + P_{t_0} dx^2 = 0.$$

Hypothesis 2) implies that the coordinate axes must be characteristic base curves. By (6.11) and (6.10) this in turn implies that  $P_{r_0} = P_{t_0} = 0$ , and hence that  $P_{s_0} \neq 0$ . But now the Implicit Function Theorem tells us that in the neighborhood of the point  $(0,0; 0; 0,0; 0, s_0, 0)$  equation (1.1) can be solved explicitly in the form

$$(6.12) \quad s = f(x,y; u; p,q; r,t).$$

Under hypothesis 3) or 3)', the function  $f \in C'''$  or  $C''$ , respectively, in a neighborhood of this point. Moreover,

$$(6.13) \quad f_{r_0} = f_{t_0} = 0 \quad \text{and} \quad s_0 = f_0$$

while the hyperbolic condition becomes at the origin

$$(6.14) \quad 1 - 4 f_{r_0} f_{t_0} = 1 > 0$$

and the equation for the characteristic base curves becomes

$$(6.15) \quad f_r dy^2 + dx dy + f_t dx^2 = 0.$$

Let us assume that we have a particular integral surface  $I: s = u(x,y)$  passing through the coordinate axes in a neighborhood of the origin, with  $u(x,y) \in C'''$  in this neighborhood..

We define

(01-0)

While the no. 1000 is in the  
the no. 1000 is

(01-0)

the no. 1000 is in the  
the no. 1000 is

the no. 1000 is in the  
the no. 1000 is

(01-0)

the no. 1000 is

(01-0)

the no. 1000 is

the no. 1000 is

the no. 1000 is

$$(6.16) \quad \delta = \sqrt{1 - 4 f_p f_t}, \quad \rho = \frac{-2f_t}{1+\delta}, \quad \sigma = \frac{-2f_p}{1+\delta},$$

$\delta$ ,  $\rho$  and  $\sigma$  being of class  $C^1$  by hypothesis 3), or of class  $C^1$  by hypothesis 3)', in the variables  $x, y; u; p, q; r, t$  in a neighborhood of the point  $(0,0; 0; 0,0; 0,0)$ . The two one-parameter families of characteristic base curves corresponding to  $J$  are thus represented by the equations

$$(6.17) \quad y_\lambda = \rho x_\lambda$$

$$(6.18) \quad x_\mu = \sigma y_\mu.$$

Note that  $\delta_0 = 1$ , hence  $\delta > 0$  in a neighborhood of the origin, while  $\rho_0 = \sigma_0 = 0$ .

As in Chapter V, to obtain the system of characteristic equations, we transform to the characteristic base curves as coordinates and consider what relations must be satisfied along these coordinates for any given integral surface  $J$ . In particular, we specialize the transformation

$$(6.19) \quad \begin{cases} x = x(\lambda, \mu) \\ y = y(\lambda, \mu) \end{cases}$$

by stipulating that a line  $\lambda = \text{constant}$  shall have  $x$ -intercept  $(\lambda, 0)$  and a line  $\mu = \text{constant}$  shall have  $y$ -intercept  $(0, \mu)$ , with  $\lambda = \mu = 0$  at the origin. The Jacobian of this transformation, evaluated at the origin, has the value

$$(6.20) \quad x_{\lambda_0} y_{\mu_0} - y_{\lambda_0} x_{\mu_0} = x_{\lambda_0} y_{\mu_0} (1 - \rho_0 \sigma_0) = x_{\lambda_0} y_{\mu_0} \neq 0,$$

since if  $x_{\lambda_0} = 0$ , then  $y_{\lambda_0} = 0$  by (6.17), contradicting the requirement that  $\dot{x}^2 + \dot{y}^2 \neq 0$  along any characteristic curve.



Similarly, if  $y_{\mu_0} = 0$ , then  $x_{\mu_0} = 0$  by (6.16) and the contradiction is again obtained.

Paralleling our development in Chapter V, we see that certain determinants must vanish at each point of the integral surface  $J$ , yielding equations which must be satisfied along the characteristics on  $J$ . We have

$$(6.21) \quad \begin{vmatrix} f_r & -[f]_x & f_t \\ x_\lambda & r_\lambda & 0 \\ 0 & s_\lambda & y_\lambda \end{vmatrix} = f_r r_\lambda y_\lambda + f_t s_\lambda x_\lambda + [f]_x x_\lambda y_\lambda = 0$$

where

$$(6.22) \quad [f]_x = f_p r + f_q f + f_u p + f_x.$$

also

$$(6.23) \quad \begin{vmatrix} f_r & -[f]_y & f_t \\ x_\lambda & s_\lambda & 0 \\ 0 & t_\lambda & y_\lambda \end{vmatrix} = f_r s_\lambda y_\lambda + f_t t_\lambda x_\lambda + [f]_y x_\lambda y_\lambda = 0$$

where

$$(6.24) \quad [f]_y = f_p f + f_q t + f_u q + f_y.$$

Eliminating  $s_\lambda$  between (6.21) and (6.23), we obtain

$$(6.25) \quad f_r^2 r_\lambda y_\lambda^2 - f_t^2 t_\lambda x_\lambda^2 + [f]_x f_r x_\lambda y_\lambda^2 - [f]_y f_t x_\lambda^2 y_\lambda = 0.$$

By virtue of definitions (6.16) and equation (5.17), we may write (6.25) as

$$(6.26) \quad f_t^2 x_\lambda^2 \cdot \Pi(\lambda, \mu) = 0$$





where

$$(6.27) \quad H(\lambda, \mu) = r_\lambda \sigma^2 - t_\lambda + \frac{2}{1+\delta} \left\{ [f]_y - \sigma [f]_x \right\} x_\lambda.$$

But, as shown above,  $x_\lambda \neq 0$  along any of the characteristic base curves of  $J$  of the corresponding family, hence (6.26) reduces to

$$(6.28) \quad f_t^2 \cdot H(\lambda, \mu) = 0.$$

Where  $f_t \neq 0$  we have immediately that  $H(\lambda, \mu) = 0$ . Suppose at a particular point of  $J$  that  $f_t = 0$ . Then by (6.16) and (6.17), we have there that

$$(6.29) \quad \rho = 0, \quad \delta = 1, \quad \sigma = -f_r \quad \text{and} \quad y_\lambda = 0.$$

Thus, at this point, by (6.24),

$$(6.30) \quad t_\lambda = s_y x_\lambda = (f_r r_y + [f]_y) x_\lambda;$$

while by (5.22),

$$(6.31) \quad r_\lambda \sigma^2 = f_r^2 r_x x_\lambda = f_r^2 (s_\lambda - [f]_x x_\lambda).$$

Substituting (6.30) and (6.31) into (6.27), we obtain that where  $f_t = 0$  on  $J$ ,  $H(\lambda, \mu) = 0$ . Hence by (6.28),  $H(\lambda, \mu) = 0$  everywhere on  $J$  and represents a relation which must be satisfied along each characteristic of the corresponding family on  $J$ .

For the other family of characteristics on  $J$ , we have determinants corresponding to (6.21) and (6.22) which vanish at each point of  $J$ . Eliminating  $s_\mu$  between these and arguing in a fashion analogous to that above, we arrive at the following rela-

(72.0)

It is a very good idea to have a copy of the contract in your possession at all times. This will help you to avoid any confusion or misunderstanding.

tion which must be satisfied along each characteristic of this family on  $J$ :

$$(6.32) \quad K(\lambda, \mu) = \rho^2 t_\mu - r_\mu + \frac{2}{1+\delta} \left\{ [f]_x - \rho [f]_y \right\} y_\mu = 0.$$

We are now in a position to prescribe the necessary and sufficient conditions that the coordinate axes be characteristics for any integral surface of

$$(6.12) \quad s = f(x, y; u; p, q; r, t)$$

passing through them.

Suppose that, in a neighborhood of the origin, the coordinate axes are characteristic to some integral surface  $J: u=u(x, y)$  of (6.12) passing through them. Then in terms of the characteristic base curves to  $J$  as coordinates, defined by the coordinate transformation (6.18), we have for  $\mu = 0$ :

$$x = \lambda, \quad y = 0, \quad u = p = r = 0, \quad q = Q(\lambda), \quad t = T(\lambda),$$

where, from (6.12),

$$(6.33) \quad Q'(\lambda) = f(\lambda, 0; 0; 0, Q(\lambda); 0, T(\lambda)),$$

while, from  $H(\lambda, \mu) = 0$ , since  $\rho = f_t = 0$ ,  $\delta = 1$  and

$$\sigma = -f_r,$$

$$(6.34) \quad T'(\lambda) = \left\{ [f]_y + f_r [f]_x \right\} (\lambda, 0; 0; 0, Q(\lambda); 0, T(\lambda)).$$

Moreover,

$$(6.35) \quad Q(0) = T(0) = 0.$$

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

21 00 751502

$$y = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} \right) + \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{x} - \frac{1}{x^2} \right) = \frac{1}{x}$$

100 - 1000 - 1000 - 1000 - 1000 - 1000 - 1000 - 1000 - 1000 - 1000

[illegible]

3. 1990. *Journal of the American Water Resources Association*, 26: 101-110.

Equations (6.33) and (6.34) represent a system of first order ordinary differential equations under one point boundary conditions (6.35). The right hand sides of the equations of this system are of class  $C^1$  under hypothesis 3), or of class  $C^1$  under hypothesis 3)', in the variables  $\lambda$ ,  $Q$  and  $T$ . Hence, in either case, the functions  $Q$  and  $T$  are uniquely determined in a neighborhood of  $\lambda = 0$ . If the  $x$  axis is characteristic, these functions must also satisfy

$$(6.36) \quad f_t(\lambda, 0; 0; 0, Q(\lambda); 0, T(\lambda)) = 0.$$

Similarly, for  $\lambda = 0$ :

$$x = 0, y = \mu, u = q = t = 0, p = P(\mu), r = R(\mu),$$

where, from (6.12),

$$(6.37) \quad P'(\mu) = f(0, \mu; 0; P(\mu), 0; R(\mu), 0),$$

while, from  $X(\lambda, \mu) = 0$ , since  $\sigma = f_p = 0$ ,  $\delta = 1$  and  $\rho = -f_t$ ,

$$(6.38) \quad R'(\mu) = \left\{ [f]_x + f_t [f]_y \right\} (0, \mu; 0; P(\mu), 0; R(\mu), 0).$$

Moreover,

$$(6.39) \quad P(0) = R(0) = 0.$$

Hence, if the  $y$  axis is characteristic, the functions  $P$  and  $R$ , uniquely determined by (6.37), (6.38), and (6.39), must also satisfy

$$(6.40) \quad f_p(0, \mu; 0; P(\mu), 0; R(\mu), 0) = 0.$$



To recapitulate, the necessary condition that the  $x$  axis be a characteristic of some integral surface is that the functions  $Q$  and  $T$  determined from the system (6.33) and (6.34), under boundary conditions (6.35), shall satisfy (6.36) for each  $\lambda$  in a neighborhood of  $\lambda = 0$ . The necessary condition that the  $y$  axis be a characteristic of some integral surface is that the functions  $P$  and  $R$  determined from the system (6.37) and (6.38), under boundary conditions (6.39), shall satisfy (6.40) for each  $\mu$  in a neighborhood of  $\mu = 0$ .

We now show that these conditions are also sufficient, i.e. given in the vicinity of the origin, an integral surface  $J: u = u(x, y)$  of (6.12) passing through the coordinate axes, with

$$(6.41) \quad P_1(y) = u_x(0, y), \quad P_1(y) = u_{xx}(0, y), \quad Q_1(x) = u_y(x, 0), \\ \text{and } T_1(x) = u_{xy}(x, 0),$$

we show that the requirement

$$(6.40)': \quad f_P(0, y; 0; P_1(y), 0; R_1(y), 0) = 0$$

is sufficient that the  $y$  axis be a characteristic on  $J$ .

The argument needed to show that the requirement

$$(6.40): \quad f_T(x, 0; 0; 0, Q_1(x); 0, T_1(x)) = 0$$

is sufficient in order that the  $x$  axis be a characteristic on  $J$  is analogous to the following and will not be given here.

We need show only that under requirement (6.40)',  $P_1(y) = P(y)$  and  $R_1(y) = R(y)$ , where  $P(y)$  and  $R(y)$  are those functions obtained

to recognize the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of

the necessity of the necessity of



previously under the assumption that the y-axis was "intrinsically characteristic".

Now  $P_1(0) = R_1(0) = 0$  since  $u(x,0) = 0$ . Moreover, since  $u$  satisfies

$$(6.12) \quad s = f(x, y; u; p, q; r, t),$$

for  $x = 0$ ,

$$(6.37)' \quad P_1'(y) = f(0, y; 0; P_1(y), 0; R_1(y), 0).$$

Now, recalling that  $u \in C^{(1)}$ ,

$$(6.42) \quad s_x = f_r r_x + f_t t_x + [f]_x,$$

$$(6.43) \quad s_y = f_r r_y + f_t t_y + [f]_y.$$

Since  $u(0, y) = 0$ , we obtain  $t_y(0, y) = 0$ . Writing  $r_x(0, y) = w(y)$  and substituting (6.43) into (6.42) with  $x = 0$ , we obtain

$$(6.44) \quad \begin{aligned} s_x(0, y) &= r_y(0, y) \\ &= f_r w(y) + f_t f_r r_y + [f]_x + f_t [f]_y \end{aligned}$$

But,  $u(0, y) = u_y(0, y) = u_{yy}(0, y) = 0$ , hence by (6.44),

$$(6.38)' \quad R_1'(y) = \left[ \frac{1}{1-f_r^2} \left\{ [f]_x + f_t [f]_y + f_r w(y) \right\} \right](0, y; 0; P_1(y), 0; R_1(y), 0).$$

Now equation (6.37)' is precisely the same as (6.37), while requirement (6.40)' is sufficient to reduce (6.38)' to (6.38). But this implies that  $P_1(y) = P(y)$  and  $R_1(y) = R(y)$  since the solution of the system of ordinary differential equations in question is unique.



In the foregoing arguments we have developed a procedure for determining whether or not the initial curves are "intrinsically characteristic". By transformation (6.1) and substitution (6.5), we reduce the initial curves  $\Gamma_1$  and  $\Gamma_2$  to the coordinate axes. If now  $s_0$  can be uniquely determined from (6.9) we may verify the hyperbolic condition and obtain the characteristic directions at the origin. If these directions coincide with the coordinate axes, then equation (1.1) can be solved explicitly for (6.12). From this, the system (6.37) and (6.38) under boundary condition (6.39) can, in principle at least, be solved for functions  $P$  and  $R$ . Finally if  $P$  and  $R$  satisfy (6.40) then the  $y$  axis is characteristic to any integral surface of the problem, i.e. "intrinsically characteristic". Likewise, from the system (6.33) and (6.34) under boundary condition (6.35), the functions  $Q$  and  $T$  can be determined. If these satisfy (6.36) then the  $x$  axis is "intrinsically characteristic". Note that  $P$ ,  $R$ ,  $Q$  and  $T$  are evidently of class  $C^1$ .

Having given hypothesis 2) a precise meaning along with a procedure for determining whether or not it is verified for a given problem, we continue with the proof under the assumption that hypothesis 2) is verified.

From equations (6.17), (6.18), (6.27), (6.32) and the strip conditions we obtain the following system of characteristic equations, which must be satisfied along the characteristics on any integral surface  $J$ :

The first of these is the fact that the  
Department of the Interior is now  
concerned with the management of the  
public lands. It is the duty of the  
Department to see that the public lands  
are properly managed and that the  
interests of the people are protected.  
The Department is also concerned with  
the conservation of the natural resources  
of the country. It is the duty of the  
Department to see that the natural  
resources are properly managed and that  
the interests of the people are protected.  
The Department is also concerned with  
the management of the public lands.  
It is the duty of the Department to  
see that the public lands are properly  
managed and that the interests of the  
people are protected.

$$\begin{aligned}
 (6.45) \quad & \left. \begin{aligned}
 \psi_1 &= y_\lambda - \rho x_\lambda = 0 \\
 \psi_2 &= r_\lambda \sigma^2 - t_\lambda + \frac{\sigma}{1+\delta} \left\{ [f]_y - \sigma [f]_x \right\} x_\lambda = 0 \\
 \psi_3 &= u_\lambda - p x_\lambda - q y_\lambda = 0 \\
 \psi_4 &= p_\lambda - r x_\lambda - f y_\lambda = 0 \\
 \psi_5 &= q_\lambda - f x_\lambda - t y_\lambda = 0
 \end{aligned} \right\} \text{System A} \\
 & \left. \begin{aligned}
 \psi_1 &= x_\mu - \sigma y_\mu = 0 \\
 \psi_2 &= r_\mu - \rho^2 t_\mu - \frac{\rho}{1+\delta} \left\{ [f]_x - \rho [f]_y \right\} y_\mu = 0 \\
 \psi_3 &= u_\mu - p x_\mu - q y_\mu = 0 \\
 \psi_4 &= p_\mu - r x_\mu - f y_\mu = 0 \\
 \psi_5 &= q_\mu - f x_\mu - t y_\mu = 0
 \end{aligned} \right\} \text{System B}
 \end{aligned}$$

We observe that System A of (6.45) is of canonical hyperbolic form in  $x, y; u; p, q; r, t$  as functions of  $\lambda$  and  $\mu$ . Since for Theorem 9,  $F \in C'''$ , while for Theorem 9a,  $F \in C''$ , the coefficients of all equations in (6.45) are functions of class  $C''$  for Theorem 9, and of class  $C'$  for Theorem 9a. Moreover, the matrix of coefficients for System A is, after interchange of rows and columns,

$$\begin{aligned}
 (6.46) \quad & \begin{vmatrix}
 -\rho & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 1 & -\sigma & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 * & 0 & \sigma^2 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 0 & * & 1 & -\rho & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 * & = & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
 * & & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
 * & = & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
 \end{vmatrix} \\
 & = (1 - \rho\sigma) (\sigma^2 \rho^2 - 1) = \frac{-\delta^2}{(1+\delta)^2}
 \end{aligned}$$

1990

1. The first step is to identify the problem or question that needs to be answered. This involves understanding the context and the specific requirements of the task.

8-27-1964-4-23

[illegible]

where the coefficients designated only by asterisks, \*, do not contribute to the value of the determinant. But  $\delta > 0$  everywhere on  $J$  in a neighborhood of the origin, hence the determinant (6.45) does not vanish thereon.

As to the initial conditions, we have, by hypothesis 1) of Theorems 8 and 9a for  $\mu = 0$ ,

$$x = \lambda, y = 0, u = p = r = 0, q = Q(\lambda), t = T(\lambda),$$

and for  $\lambda = 0$ ,

$$x = 0, y = \mu, u = q = t = 0, p = P(\mu), r = R(\mu)$$

where  $Q, T$  and  $P, R$  are determined from their respective systems and are of class  $C^1$ . Moreover, for  $\mu = 0$ , by (6.36),  $f_t = 0$ .

Hence  $\rho = 0$ ,  $\delta = 1$ , and  $\sigma = -f_p$ . This together with

$\gamma_\lambda = r_\lambda = u_\lambda = p_\lambda = 0$  and equation (6.34) prove that

$$(6.47) \quad \varphi_1(\lambda, 0) = \varphi_2(\lambda, 0) = \varphi_3(\lambda, 0) = \varphi_4(\lambda, 0) = \varphi_5(\lambda, 0) = 0$$

for all  $\lambda$  in a neighborhood of  $\lambda = 0$ . Similarly, for  $\lambda = 0$ ,

by (6.40),  $f_p = 0$ . Hence  $\sigma = 0$ ,  $\delta = 1$  and  $\rho = -f_t$ . This to-

gether with  $x_\mu = t_\mu = u_\mu = q_\mu = 0$  and equation (6.38) prove that

$$(6.48) \quad \psi_1(0, \mu) = \psi_2(0, \mu) = \psi_3(0, \mu) = \psi_4(0, \mu) = \psi_5(0, \mu) = 0$$

for all  $\mu$  in a neighborhood of  $\mu = 0$ . Thus the initial condition requirements of hypothesis 3) of Theorems 8 and 9a are satisfied.

Since the coefficients in (6.45) are of class  $C^1$  for Theorem 8, hypotheses 1) and 2) of Theorem 8 are satisfied. Also, since the coefficients in (6.45) are of class  $C^1$  for Theorem 9a, the

1. The first part of the paper is devoted to a general discussion of the problem of the existence of solutions of the system of equations (1) for arbitrary values of the parameters  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ . It is shown that the system has solutions for all values of the parameters  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  if the function  $f(x)$  is continuous and has a bounded derivative.

2. In the second part of the paper the problem of the existence of solutions of the system of equations (1) for arbitrary values of the parameters  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  is solved. It is shown that the system has solutions for all values of the parameters  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  if the function  $f(x)$  is continuous and has a bounded derivative.

3. In the third part of the paper the problem of the existence of solutions of the system of equations (1) for arbitrary values of the parameters  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  is solved. It is shown that the system has solutions for all values of the parameters  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  if the function  $f(x)$  is continuous and has a bounded derivative.

4. In the fourth part of the paper the problem of the existence of solutions of the system of equations (1) for arbitrary values of the parameters  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  is solved. It is shown that the system has solutions for all values of the parameters  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  if the function  $f(x)$  is continuous and has a bounded derivative.

5. In the fifth part of the paper the problem of the existence of solutions of the system of equations (1) for arbitrary values of the parameters  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  is solved. It is shown that the system has solutions for all values of the parameters  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  if the function  $f(x)$  is continuous and has a bounded derivative.



common hypothesis 1) of Theorems 6 and 6a is satisfied, but hypothesis 2) of Theorem 6, a hypothesis which does not appear in Theorem 6a, is not satisfied. Thus if we now show that any solution of the canonical hyperbolic system, System A of (6.45), with the given characteristic initial conditions is also a solution of the corresponding problem for the equation

$$(6.12) \quad s = f(x, y; u; p, q; r, t)$$

with the same initial conditions, then Theorem 9 is an immediate consequence of Theorem 6 and Theorem 9a is an immediate consequence of Theorem 6a.

As in the Cauchy problem of Chapter 5, we show that for each solution of System A under the given characteristic initial conditions that System B is likewise satisfied. Note that here we cannot assume that  $p, q, r$  and  $t$  are derivatives of  $u$ ; this is a matter of proof. Recalling from Theorems 6 and 6a that the functions of the solution of System A,  $x, y, u, p, q, r, t$  are of class  $C^1$  and that  $f \in C^{1,1}$  under hypothesis 3) of Theorem 9, or  $f \in C^1$  under hypothesis 3)' of Theorem 9a, we obtain by differentiation and consideration of (6.45) that

$$(6.49) \quad \begin{aligned} \psi_{3,\lambda} - \varphi_{2,\mu} &= p_\mu x_\lambda + q_\mu y_\lambda - p_\lambda x_\mu - q_\lambda y_\mu \\ &= \psi_{4x_\lambda} + \psi_{5y_\lambda} - \varphi_{4x_\mu} - \varphi_{5y_\mu}. \end{aligned}$$

Moreover, since  $\varphi_3 = \varphi_4 = \varphi_5 = 0$ ,

$$(6.50) \quad \begin{aligned} f_\lambda &= f_r r_\lambda + f_t t_\lambda + f_p p_\lambda + f_q q_\lambda + f_u u_\lambda + f_x x_\lambda + f_y y_\lambda \\ &= f_r r_\lambda + f_t t_\lambda + [f]_x x_\lambda + [f]_y y_\lambda, \end{aligned}$$

while

1. The first group of 10 is a group of 10 (10 elements, 10 elements)

2. The second group of 10 is a group of 10 (10 elements, 10 elements)

3. The third group of 10 is a group of 10 (10 elements, 10 elements)

4. The fourth group of 10 is a group of 10 (10 elements, 10 elements)

5. The fifth group of 10 is a group of 10 (10 elements, 10 elements)

6. The sixth group of 10 is a group of 10 (10 elements, 10 elements)

7. The seventh group of 10 is a group of 10 (10 elements, 10 elements)

8. The eighth group of 10 is a group of 10 (10 elements, 10 elements)

9. The ninth group of 10 is a group of 10 (10 elements, 10 elements)

10. The tenth group of 10 is a group of 10 (10 elements, 10 elements)

$$\begin{aligned}
 (6.51) \quad f_\mu &= f_r x_\mu + f_t t_\mu + f_p p_\mu + f_q q_\mu + f_u u_\mu + f_x x_\mu + f_y y_\mu \\
 &= f_r x_\mu + f_t t_\mu + [f]_x x_\mu + [f]_y y_\mu \\
 &\quad + f_p \psi_4 + f_q \psi_5 + f_u \psi_3.
 \end{aligned}$$

Thus by (6.45), (6.50) and (6.51),

$$\begin{aligned}
 (6.52) \quad \psi_{4,\lambda} - \varphi_{4,\mu} &= f_\mu x_\lambda + f_\mu y_\lambda - f_\lambda x_\mu - f_\lambda y_\mu \\
 &= y_\lambda \{ f_p \psi_4 + f_q \psi_5 + f_u \psi_3 \} \\
 &\quad + \left( \frac{1+\delta}{2} \right) x_\lambda \psi_2 - \left( \frac{1+\delta}{2} \right) p y_\mu \varphi_2,
 \end{aligned}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned}
 (6.53) \quad \psi_{5,\lambda} - \varphi_{5,\mu} &= f_\mu x_\lambda + f_\mu y_\lambda - f_\lambda x_\mu - f_\lambda y_\mu \\
 &= x_\lambda \{ f_p \psi_4 + f_q \psi_5 + f_u \psi_3 \} \\
 &\quad - \left( \frac{1+\delta}{2} \right) \sigma x_\lambda \psi_2 + \left( \frac{1+\delta}{2} \right) y_\mu \varphi_2.
 \end{aligned}$$

Taking into account the fact that System A is satisfied, we reduce (6.49), (6.52) and (6.53) to the system

$$\begin{aligned}
 \psi_{3,\lambda} &= \psi_4 x_\lambda + \psi_5 y_\lambda \\
 (6.54) \quad \psi_{4,\lambda} &= y_\lambda \{ f_u \psi_3 + f_p \psi_4 + f_q \psi_5 \} \\
 \psi_{5,\lambda} &= x_\lambda \{ f_u \psi_3 + f_p \psi_4 + f_q \psi_5 \}
 \end{aligned}$$

or fixed  $\mu$ , (6.54) represents a system of linear, homogeneous, first order ordinary differential equations for the functions  $\psi_3$ ,  $\psi_4$  and  $\psi_5$  of the variable  $\lambda$ . Moreover, by (6.43),



the homogeneous one point boundary conditions

$$\psi_3(0, \mu) = \psi_4(0, \mu) = \psi_5(0, \mu) = 0$$

must be satisfied. Hence, the unique solution for the system (6.54) is

$$\psi_3 = \psi_4 = \psi_5 = 0$$

wherever the solution of system A is defined.

Consider the linear algebraic system,

$$(6.55) \quad \begin{cases} \psi_3 = u_\lambda - p x_\lambda - q y_\lambda = 0 \\ \psi_3 = u_\mu - p x_\mu - q y_\mu = 0. \end{cases}$$

The determinant of this system, by (6.20), does not vanish in a neighborhood of the origin, hence in this neighborhood there exists a unique solution for  $p$  and  $q$ . Since  $p = u_x$  and  $q = u_y$  satisfy (6.55) they are the solution of (6.55)

Similarly, from

$$(6.56) \quad \begin{cases} \psi_4 = p_\lambda - r x_\lambda - t y_\lambda \\ \psi_4 = p_\mu - r x_\mu - t y_\mu, \end{cases}$$

we obtain  $r = u_{xx}$  and  $t = u_{xy}$ ,

while from

$$(6.57) \quad \begin{cases} \psi_5 = q_\lambda - f x_\lambda - t y_\lambda \\ \psi_5 = q_\mu - f x_\mu - t y_\mu, \end{cases}$$

we obtain the additional information that  $t = u_{yy}$ . Consequently, any solution of system I under the given characteristic initial conditions satisfies the equation

1. The first part of the paper is devoted to the study of the

properties of the function  $f(x) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{x^n}{n!}$ .

2. In the second part we consider the problem of the

existence of the

limit  $\lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} f(x)$ .

3. The third part of the paper is devoted to the study of the

properties of the function  $f(x) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{x^n}{n!}$ .

4. In the fourth part we consider the problem of the

existence of the

limit

$\lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} f(x)$ .

$$u_{xy} = f(x,y; u; u_x, u_y; u_{xx}, u_{yy})$$

in a neighborhood of the point  $(0,0; 0; 0,0; 0,0)$  and the proof of Theorems 9 and 9a is now complete.

Let us designate the problem considered in Theorems 9 and 9a as Problem I. By virtue of the exposition of Chapter IV and this present chapter, we may associate to this problem a particular Problem II, of the type considered in Theorems 3 and 3a of Chapter II. As we have shown, any solution of I is a solution of II, and, conversely, any solution of II is a solution of I. Where for I,  $P \in C'''$ , Theorem 3 tells us that the solution of the related Problem II is unique. Hence, as is stated in Theorem 9, the solution for I is likewise unique. If, however, for Problem I,  $P \in C''$  only, then Theorem 3a tells us merely that the related Problem II has at least one solution. Moreover, Example 1, Chapter II, tells us that this solution cannot be shown to be unique.

We must not conclude merely from the above that for  $P \in C''$  the solution to Problem I cannot be shown to be unique. We can say, though, that any proof for uniqueness, if such can be made at all, will apparently have to be based upon arguments independent of those of this paper.

# THE HISTORY OF THE

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..



## Chapter VII

## The Mixed Boundary Value Problem

$$\text{for } u_{xy} = f(x, y; u; u_x, u_y).$$

In the terminology of J. HADAMARD [11], appendix II, p. 456, the mixed hyperbolic boundary value problem is one in which we prescribe the values of the integral surface along two lines issuing from a point, one of which is characteristic to the surface in question, while the other is nowhere characteristic.

J. HADAMARD, in the reference above, and E. PICARD [7], p. 136, prove the existence of a unique solution to the linear equation

$$(7.1) \quad u_{xy} = a u_x + b u_y + c u,$$

$a$ ,  $b$  and  $c$  continuous functions of  $x$  and  $y$  alone, satisfying the initial conditions

$$(7.2) \quad u(x, 0) = u(x, x) = 0.$$

In Theorem 10, below, we extend their conclusions to the equation

$$(7.3) \quad u_{xy} = f(x, y; u; u_x, u_y)$$

maintaining initial conditions (7.2). The result is well known, but does not appear in the literature in the precise form stated. We require this precise statement because we wish to proceed from Theorem 10 by the methods of Chapters II and III in which we relax the Lipschitz condition on the function  $f$  to require merely

1949年10月

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

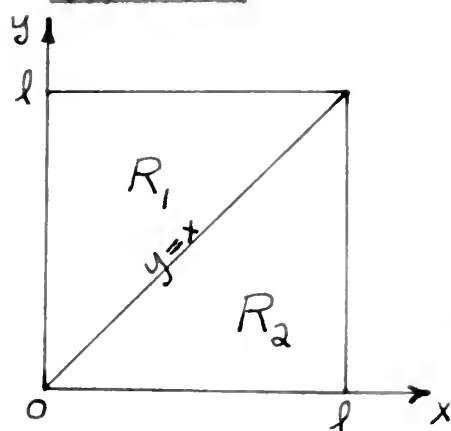
1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

1949年10月1日

that  $f$  be partially Lipschitzian. Thus we obtain the improved statement of Theorem 10a.

### Theorem 10



$$1) f(x,y; u; p,q) \in C(E), E: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq l \\ -a \leq u \leq a \\ -b \leq p \leq b \\ -b \leq q \leq b \end{cases}$$

2)  $f$  is Lipschitzian on  $E$  (as defined in Theorem 1.)

3)  $M l^2 \leq a, M l \leq b$ , where

$$M = \max |f| \text{ on } E$$

4) There exists one and only one function  $u(x,y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{xy}(x,y) \in C(R)$ , where  $R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq l \end{cases}$ , such that for each

$(x,y) \in R$ , the point  $(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)) \in E$ , and

$$u_{xy}(x,y) = f(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)),$$

$$u(x,0) = u(x,x) = 0 \quad \text{for each } (x,y) \in R.$$

### Proof

This proof is based upon PICARD's variation of the method of successive approximations, [1] p. 358 or [7] p. 117. Here the uniform convergence of the approximating functions to the solution is verified by means of a majorant series. The majorant series used is that obtained from the approximating functions converging uniformly to the solution for the particular linear equation

1. The first part of the report is a general introduction to the subject of the study. It discusses the importance of the study and the objectives of the research.



$$(7.4) \quad w_{xy} = K (w + w_x + w_y)$$

with the same initial conditions.  $K$  is the Lipschitz constant for the function  $f$  of (7.3). PICARD applied this technique to the characteristic initial value problem, obtaining Theorem 1 of Chapter II. He thus obtained the theorem for the characteristic initial value problem for the non-linear equation (7.3) from the theorem for the characteristic initial value problem for the linear equation (7.1).

For the mixed boundary value problem under consideration, a curious situation arises. We do not obtain a majorant series from equation (7.4) under mixed initial conditions. However, we do find that PICARD's majorant series for the characteristic initial value problem serves as well for this problem. Thus Theorem 10 follows not from the theorem for the mixed boundary value problem for the linear equation (7.1) but from the theorem for the characteristic initial value problem for equation (7.1).

It is sufficient, as we shall demonstrate later, to show existence of a unique solution in region  $R_2: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq x \end{cases}$ . Assuming  $(x, y) \in R_2$ , we may express the problem as the integral equation

$$(7.5) \quad u(x, y) = \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\eta.$$

By differentiation,

$$(7.6) \quad u_x(x, y) = \int_0^y f(x, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\eta,$$

and



$$(7.7) \quad u_y(x, y) = \int_y^x f(\xi, y; u; u_x, u_y) d\xi - \int_0^y f(y, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\eta.$$

We form the successive approximations

$$(7.8) \quad \begin{cases} u_1(x, y) = \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; 0; 0, 0) d\eta \\ u_2(x, y) = \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u_1; u_{1,x}, u_{1,y}) d\eta \\ \vdots \\ u_n(x, y) = \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u_{n-1}; u_{n-1,x}, u_{n-1,y}) d\eta \\ \vdots \end{cases}$$

where, by differentiation,

$$(7.9) \quad u_{n,x}(x, y) = \int_0^y f(x, \eta; u_{n-1}; u_{n-1,x}, u_{n-1,y}) d\eta, \\ (n = 1, 2, \dots),$$

$$(7.10) \quad u_{n,y}(x, y) = \int_y^x f(\xi, y; u_{n-1}; u_{n-1,x}, u_{n-1,y}) d\xi \\ - \int_0^y f(y, \eta; u_{n-1}; u_{n-1,x}, u_{n-1,y}) d\eta, \\ (n = 1, 2, \dots).$$

Since the point  $(x, y; 0; 0, 0) \in S$  for  $(x, y) \in R_2$ , by hypothesis 3),

$$\begin{aligned} |u_1(x, y)| &\leq M |x - y| \cdot |y| \leq M \rho^2 \leq a, \\ |u_{1,x}(x, y)| &\leq M |y| \leq M \rho \leq b, \\ |u_{1,y}(x, y)| &\leq M \{|x - y| + |y|\} \\ &= M|x| \leq M \rho \leq b \end{aligned}$$

Thus, by induction, for all  $n$  and for any  $(x, y) \in R_2$

$$(7.11) \quad \begin{cases} |u_n(x, y)| \leq M \rho^2 \leq a, \\ |u_{n,x}(x, y)| \leq M \rho \leq b, \\ |u_{n,y}(x, y)| \leq M \rho \leq b. \end{cases}$$





Our purpose is to show that on  $R_2$

$$(7.12) \quad \{u_n\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u, \quad \{u_{n,x}\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u_x \text{ and } \{u_{n,y}\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u_y$$

such that the function  $u$  and its derivatives satisfy conclusion 4) for  $(x,y) \in R_2$ . To accomplish this we consider the successive approximations

$$(7.13) \quad \begin{aligned} w_1(x,y) &= \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y K d\eta \\ w_2(x,y) &= \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y K(w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}) d\eta \\ &\vdots \\ w_n(x,y) &= \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y K(w_{n-1} + w_{n-1,x} + w_{n-1,y}) d\eta \\ &\vdots \end{aligned}$$

where, by differentiation,

$$(7.14) \quad w_{n,x}(x,y) = \int_0^y K [w_{n-1} + w_{n-1,x} + w_{n-1,y}] (x, \eta) d\eta, \quad (n = 1, 2, \dots),$$

$$(7.15) \quad w_{n,y}(x,y) = \int_0^x K [w_{n-1} + w_{n-1,x} + w_{n-1,y}] (\xi, y) d\xi, \quad (n = 1, 2, \dots).$$

Here  $M = \max |f|$  on  $E$  while  $K$  is the Lipschitz constant of hypothesis 2).

Now  $w_1(x,y) = Kxy$ , hence  $w_1(x,y) = w_1(y,x)$ . Moreover,  $w_{1,x}(x,y) = Ky$ ,  $w_{1,y}(x,y) = Kx$ , hence  $w_{1,x}(x,y) = w_{1,y}(y,x)$ .

Let us make the inductive hypothesis that for some fixed positive integer  $n$ ,

$$(7.16) \quad w_n(x,y) = w_n(y,x), \quad w_{n,x}(x,y) = w_{n,y}(y,x).$$



But this implies that

$$(7.17) \quad [w_n + w_{n,x} + w_{n,y}](x, y) = [w_n + w_{n,x} + w_{n,y}](y, x)$$

and thus, by (7.13),

$$w_{n+1}(x, y) = w_{n+1}(y, x).$$

Also, by (7.14) and (7.15), (7.17) implies that

$$\begin{aligned} w_{n+1,x}(x, y) &= \int_0^y K [w_n + w_{n,x} + w_{n,y}](x, \eta) d\eta \\ &= \int_0^y K [w_n + w_{n,x} + w_{n,y}](\xi, x) d\xi \\ &= w_{n+1,y}(y, x). \end{aligned}$$

Hence, by induction, (7.16) holds for  $n = 1, 2, \dots$ .

PICARD, in the references quoted above, shows that

$$(7.18) \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} w_n = w, \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} w_{n,x} = w_x, \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} w_{n,y} = w_y,$$

each uniformly convergent on  $K$ , where the function  $w$  and its derivatives satisfy

$$(7.19) \quad \begin{cases} w_{xy} = K(w + w_x + w_y), \\ w(x, 0) = w(0, y) = 0. \end{cases}$$

We now show that these series are majorant to the series

$$(7.20) \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (u_n - u_{n-1}), \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (u_{n,x} - u_{n-1,x}), \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (u_{n,y} - u_{n-1,y}),$$

respectively, for each  $(x, y) \in R_2$ , (with  $u_0 = 0$ ).

Now, for  $(x, y) \in R_2$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} |u_1(x, y)| &\leq \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; 0; 0, 0)| d\eta = \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y M d\eta = \pi_1(x, y) \\ |u_{1,x}(x, y)| &\leq \int_0^y |f(x, \eta; 0; 0, 0)| d\eta \leq \int_0^y M d\eta = \pi_{1,x}(x, y) \end{aligned}$$



$$\begin{aligned}
|u_{1,y}(x,y)| &\leq \int_y^x |f(\xi, y; 0; 0, 0)| d\xi + \int_0^y |f(y, \eta; 0; 0, 0)| d\eta \\
&\leq \int_y^x M d\xi + \int_0^y M d\eta \\
&= \int_0^x M d\xi = w_{1,y}(x,y).
\end{aligned}$$

Also, abbreviating our notation somewhat,

$$\begin{aligned}
|u_2 - u_1| &\leq \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u_1; u_{1,x}, u_{1,y}) \\
&\quad - f(\xi, \eta; 0; 0, 0)| d\eta \\
&\leq \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y K [|u_1| + |u_{1,x}| + |u_{1,y}|] (\xi, \eta) d\eta \\
&\leq \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y K [w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}] (\xi, \eta) d\eta \\
&= w_2,
\end{aligned}$$

$$|u_{2,x} - u_{1,x}| \leq \int_0^y K [w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}] (x, \eta) d\eta = w_{2,x}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
|u_{2,y} - u_{1,y}| &\leq \int_y^x K [w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}] (\xi, y) d\xi \\
&\quad + \int_0^y K [w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}] (y, \eta) d\eta \\
&= \int_y^x K [w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}] (\xi, y) d\xi \\
&\quad + \int_0^y K [w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}] (\xi, y) d\xi \\
&= \int_0^x K [w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}] (\xi, y) d\xi \\
&= w_{2,y}.
\end{aligned}$$

Hence, by induction, we obtain for  $n = 1, 2, \dots$

$$\begin{aligned}
|u_n - u_{n-1}| &= w_n, \quad |u_{n,x} - u_{n-1,x}| = w_{n,x}, \\
(7.21) \quad |u_{n,y} - u_{n-1,y}| &= w_{n,y} \quad \text{for each } (x, y) \in R_2.
\end{aligned}$$

*[Faint handwritten notes at the bottom of the page]*

Age Group	2003	2004	2005
18-29	~85	~88	~90
30-49	~75	~78	~80
50-69	~65	~68	~70
70+	~55	~58	~60

Thus the series of (7.18) are majorant to the corresponding series of (7.20). Moreover, the requirements for termwise differentiation of an infinite sum are satisfied since each of the series of (7.20) is now known to be uniformly convergent on  $R_2$ . Hence, for  $(x, y) \in R_2$ ,

$$(7.22) \quad \begin{cases} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (u_n - u_{n-1}) = u \\ \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (u_{n,x} - u_{n-1,x}) = u_x \\ \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (u_{n,y} - u_{n-1,y}) = u_y \end{cases}$$

or, in other terms, since each of these series telescopes,

$$(7.22)' \quad \{u_n\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u, \quad \{u_{n,x}\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u_x, \quad \{u_{n,y}\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u_y$$

on  $R_2$ .

We now verify that the function  $u$  and its derivatives  $u_x$  and  $u_y$  satisfy the integral equation statement of the problem (7.3):

$$\begin{aligned} & \left| u(x, y) - \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u, u_x, u_y) d\eta \right| \\ & \leq |u(x, y) - u_n(x, y)| + \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u, u_x, u_y) \\ & \quad - f(\xi, \eta; u_{n-1}, u_{n-1,x}, u_{n-1,y})| d\eta \\ (7.23) \quad & \leq |u(x, y) - u_n(x, y)| \\ & \quad + \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y \left[ |u - u_{n-1}| + |u_x - u_{n-1,x}| + |u_y - \right. \\ & \quad \left. u_{n-1,y}| \right] f(\xi, \eta) d\eta \end{aligned}$$

[illegible]

1. The first step is to identify the problem or question that needs to be answered. This involves understanding the context and the specific requirements of the task.

• **1997** – **1998** – **1999** – **2000** – **2001** – **2002** – **2003** – **2004** – **2005** – **2006** – **2007** – **2008** – **2009** – **2010** – **2011** – **2012** – **2013** – **2014** – **2015** – **2016** – **2017** – **2018** – **2019** – **2020** – **2021** – **2022** – **2023** – **2024** – **2025** – **2026** – **2027** – **2028** – **2029** – **2030** – **2031** – **2032** – **2033** – **2034** – **2035** – **2036** – **2037** – **2038** – **2039** – **2040** – **2041** – **2042** – **2043** – **2044** – **2045** – **2046** – **2047** – **2048** – **2049** – **2050** – **2051** – **2052** – **2053** – **2054** – **2055** – **2056** – **2057** – **2058** – **2059** – **2060** – **2061** – **2062** – **2063** – **2064** – **2065** – **2066** – **2067** – **2068** – **2069** – **2070** – **2071** – **2072** – **2073** – **2074** – **2075** – **2076** – **2077** – **2078** – **2079** – **2080** – **2081** – **2082** – **2083** – **2084** – **2085** – **2086** – **2087** – **2088** – **2089** – **2090** – **2091** – **2092** – **2093** – **2094** – **2095** – **2096** – **2097** – **2098** – **2099** – **2100** – **2101** – **2102** – **2103** – **2104** – **2105** – **2106** – **2107** – **2108** – **2109** – **2110** – **2111** – **2112** – **2113** – **2114** – **2115** – **2116** – **2117** – **2118** – **2119** – **2120** – **2121** – **2122** – **2123** – **2124** – **2125** – **2126** – **2127** – **2128** – **2129** – **2130** – **2131** – **2132** – **2133** – **2134** – **2135** – **2136** – **2137** – **2138** – **2139** – **2140** – **2141** – **2142** – **2143** – **2144** – **2145** – **2146** – **2147** – **2148** – **2149** – **2150** – **2151** – **2152** – **2153** – **2154** – **2155** – **2156** – **2157** – **2158** – **2159** – **2160** – **2161** – **2162** – **2163** – **2164** – **2165** – **2166** – **2167** – **2168** – **2169** – **2170** – **2171** – **2172** – **2173** – **2174** – **2175** – **2176** – **2177** – **2178** – **2179** – **2180** – **2181** – **2182** – **2183** – **2184** – **2185** – **2186** – **2187** – **2188** – **2189** – **2190** – **2191** – **2192** – **2193** – **2194** – **2195** – **2196** – **2197** – **2198** – **2199** – **2200** – **2201** – **2202** – **2203** – **2204** – **2205** – **2206** – **2207** – **2208** – **2209** – **2210** – **2211** – **2212** – **2213** – **2214** – **2215** – **2216** – **2217** – **2218** – **2219** – **2220** – **2221** – **2222** – **2223** – **2224** – **2225** – **2226** – **2227** – **2228** – **2229** – **2230** – **2231** – **2232** – **2233** – **2234** – **2235** – **2236** – **2237** – **2238** – **2239** – **2240** – **2241** – **2242** – **2243** – **2244** – **2245** – **2246** – **2247** – **2248** – **2249** – **2250** – **2251** – **2252** – **2253** – **2254** – **2255** – **2256** – **2257** – **2258** – **2259** – **2260** – **2261** – **2262** – **2263** – **2264** – **2265** – **2266** – **2267** – **2268** – **2269** – **2270** – **2271** – **2272** – **2273** – **2274** – **2275** – **2276** – **2277** – **2278** – **2279** – **2280** – **2281** – **2282** – **2283** – **2284** – **2285** – **2286** – **2287** – **2288** – **2289** – **2290** – **2291** – **2292** – **2293** – **2294** – **2295** – **2296** – **2297** – **2298** – **2299** – **2300** – **2301** – **2302** – **2303** – **2304** – **2305** – **2306** – **2307** – **2308** – **2309** – **2310** – **2311** – **2312** – **2313** – **2314** – **2315** – **2316** – **2317** – **2318** – **2319** – **2320** – **2321** – **2322** – **2323** – **2324** – **2325** – **2326** – **2327** – **2328** – **2329** – **2330** – **2331** – **2332** – **2333** – **2334** – **2335** – **2336** – **2337** – **2338** – **2339** – **2340** – **2341** – **2342** – **2343** – **2344** – **2345** – **2346** – **2347** – **2348** – **2349** – **2350** – **2351** – **2352** – **2353** – **2354** – **2355** – **2356** – **2357** – **2358** – **2359** – **2360** – **2361** – **2362** – **2363** – **2364** – **2365** – **2366** – **2367** – **2368** – <



Thus, by (7.22)', given  $\epsilon > 0$ , there exists a positive integer  $N$ , depending on  $\epsilon$  alone, such that  $n > N \Rightarrow$

$$|u(x, y) - \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\eta| < \epsilon(1+3Kf^2),$$

for  $(x, y) \in R_2$ . But  $\epsilon$  is arbitrary, hence the integral equation is satisfied.

By (7.11) and (7.22)' we see that for any  $(x, y) \in R_2$ , the point  $(x, y; u(x, y); u_x(x, y), u_y(x, y)) \in B$ . Thus existence of a solution on  $R_2$  is now proved.

To prove uniqueness, let us suppose that  $u_1$  and  $u_2$  are two solutions on  $R_2$ , then

$$\begin{aligned} (7.24) \quad |u_1(x, y) - u_2(x, y)| &\leq \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u_1; u_{1,x}, u_{1,y}) \\ &\quad - f(\xi, \eta; u_2; u_{2,x}, u_{2,y})| d\eta \\ &\leq \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y K[|u_1 - u_2| + |u_{1,x} - u_{2,x}| + |u_{1,y} - u_{2,y}|] \\ &\quad (\xi, \eta) d\eta, \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} (7.25) \quad |u_{1,x}(x, y) - u_{2,x}(x, y)| &\leq \int_0^y |f(x, \eta; u_1; u_{1,x}, u_{1,y}) \\ &\quad - f(x, \eta; u_2; u_{2,x}, u_{2,y})| d\eta \\ &\leq \int_0^y K[|u_1 - u_2| + |u_{1,x} - u_{2,x}| + |u_{1,y} - u_{2,y}|](x, \eta) d\eta, \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} (7.26) \quad |u_{1,y}(x, y) - u_{2,y}(x, y)| &\leq \int_y^x |f(\xi, y; u_1; u_{1,x}, u_{1,y}) \\ &\quad - f(\xi, y; u_2; u_{2,x}, u_{2,y})| d\xi \\ &\quad + \int_0^y |f(y, \eta; u_1; u_{1,x}, u_{1,y}) \\ &\quad - f(y, \eta; u_2; u_{2,x}, u_{2,y})| d\eta. \end{aligned}$$

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

$$f(x) = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} \right) \quad \text{for } x > 0$$

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

... (faint text) ...

Let  $\psi(x, y) = [|u_1 - u_2| + |u_{1,x} - u_{2,x}| + |u_{1,y} - u_{2,y}|](x, y)$ .

With  $R^* = \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l^* \\ 0 \leq y \leq x \end{cases}$ ,  $l^* = \min(1, l, \frac{1}{6K})$ , we have

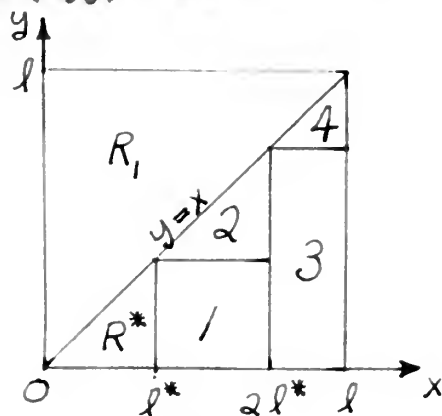
$\psi(x, y) \in C(R^*)$ . Moreover, there exists a point  $(x^*, y^*) \in R^*$  such that  $\psi(x^*, y^*) = \mu$  where  $\mu = \max \psi(x, y)$  on  $R^*$ . But, adding (7.24), (7.25) and (7.26) we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \psi(x, y) &\leq K \mu \{(x-y)y + y + (x-y) + y\} \\ &\leq K \mu (xy + x + y) \\ &\leq K \mu \cdot \frac{3}{6K} = \frac{\mu}{2}, \end{aligned}$$

hence  $\psi(x^*, y^*) = \mu \leq \frac{\mu}{2}$ , which implies  $\mu = 0$  and thus

$$(7.27) \quad u_1(x, y) = u_2(x, y)$$

for  $(x, y) \in R^*$



To extend this uniqueness proof to the domain  $R_2$ , we subdivide  $R_2$  as shown in the diagram. We know that the solution  $u$  is unique on  $R^*$  and hence determines  $u(l^*, y)$  for  $0 \leq y \leq l^*$ .

But  $u(x, 0) = 0$  by hypothesis, consequently, by Theorem 1, Chapter II, we have a unique solution  $u_1$  to the characteristic initial value problem on sub-region 1. Since  $u_x(l^*, 0) = u_{1,x}(l^*, 0)$ , we have from the differential equation that  $u_x(l^*, y) = u_{1,x}(l^*, y)$  for  $0 \leq y \leq l^*$ , i.e.  $u$  and  $u_1$  have a first order contact across the line  $x = l^*$  and hence together represent a unique solution for the region  $R^* + 1$ . Analogously, by the preceding "in the



small" uniqueness proof for the mixed boundary value problem, the solution  $u_2$  is unique in sub-region 2 and has a first order contact with  $u_1$  across the line  $y = x$ . We continue obtaining unique solutions for characteristic initial value and mixed initial value problems, alternatively as indicated by the numerical sequence in the diagram. These solutions have first order contacts with each other across the characteristics forming the boundaries of the sub-regions, hence we have extended our uniqueness proof from the region  $R_2$  to the region  $R_2$ .

Having thus determined the existence of a unique solution satisfying conclusion 4) throughout  $R_2$ , we now consider the Cauchy problem for region  $R_1$  with the same equation and hypotheses thereon and with the initial conditions

$$(7.28) \begin{cases} u^0(x, x) = 0, \quad u_{x+}^0(x, x) = u_{x+}(x, x), \text{ and} \\ u_{y-}^0(x, x) = u_{y-}(x, x) \quad \text{for } x \in [0, 1]. \end{cases}$$

In (7.28)  $u_{x+}$  and  $u_{y-}$  are the right-hand  $x$  and lower  $y$  derivatives, respectively, determined at each point of the line  $y = x$  by the known solution  $u$  on  $R_2$ . By Theorem 4, Chapter III, there exists a unique solution  $u^0$  to this Cauchy problem for each  $(x, y) \in R_1$ , hence

$$u_1(x, y) = \begin{cases} u_0(x, y) & \text{for } (x, y) \in R_1 \\ u(x, y) & \text{for } (x, y) \in R_2 \end{cases}$$

is the unique solution valid for each  $(x, y) \in R = R_1 + R_2$ , since  $u_0$  and  $u$  have, by prescription, a first order contact across the line  $y = x$ . This completes the proof of Theorem 10.

1. The first part of the report is a general introduction to the subject.

2. The second part is a detailed description of the methods used.

3. The third part is a discussion of the results obtained.

4. The fourth part is a conclusion and summary of the work.

5. The fifth part is a list of references and a bibliography.

6. The sixth part is a list of figures and tables.

7. The seventh part is a list of appendices.

8. The eighth part is a list of footnotes.

9. The ninth part is a list of errata.

10. The tenth part is a list of acknowledgments.

11. The eleventh part is a list of dedications.

12. The twelfth part is a list of prefaces.

13. The thirteenth part is a list of forewords.

14. The fourteenth part is a list of introductions.

15. The fifteenth part is a list of conclusions.

16. The sixteenth part is a list of summaries.

17. The seventeenth part is a list of abstracts.

18. The eighteenth part is a list of indexes.

19. The nineteenth part is a list of tables of contents.

20. The twentieth part is a list of lists of contents.

Relaxing only hypothesis 2) of Theorem 10, we obtain the following improvement:

Theorem 10a

1)

2)'  $f$  is partially Lipschitzian on  $B$  (as defined in Theorem 1a.)

3)

$\Rightarrow$  4)' There exists at least one function, etc. (as in Theorem 10.)

Outline of the proof:

As in the proof of Theorem 10, we may, without loss, prove existence on  $R_2$  only. For, prescribing Cauchy conditions on  $y = x$  as before, we may extend the solution from  $R_2$  to  $R_1$ , by use of Theorem 4a, Chapter III.

In this proof we follow very closely the derivation of Theorem 1a, Chapter II; hence only the differences between the two proofs will be noted.

WEIERSTRASS' theorem tells us that there exists a sequence of polynomials,  $\{p_\lambda\}$ , converging uniformly to  $f$  on  $B$ . We extend the  $p_\lambda$ , ( $\lambda = 1, 2, \dots$ ), and  $f$  from  $B$  to

$$B': \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq 1 \\ -\infty < u < \infty \\ -\infty < p < \infty \\ -\infty < q < \infty \end{cases}$$

by definitions analogous to (2.1). There

exists a constant  $L > 0$  such that  $|p_\lambda| \leq L$  in  $B'$  and for all  $\lambda$ . Here-

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

1955

12

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

13

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

14

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

15

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

16

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

17

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS



over, the  $g_\lambda$  are "fully" Lipschitzian in  $B'$ . Hence by Theorem 10, (with  $a \rightarrow \infty$ ,  $b \rightarrow \infty$ ), for each  $g_\lambda$  there exists a unique function  $u_\lambda$  such that for  $(x, y) \in R_2$

$$(7.29) \quad u_\lambda = \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y g_\lambda(\xi, \eta; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\eta,$$

and thus

$$(7.30) \quad u_{\lambda, x} = \int_0^y g_\lambda(x, \eta; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\eta,$$

$$(7.31) \quad u_{\lambda, y} = \int_y^x g_\lambda(\xi, y; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\xi \\ - \int_0^y g_\lambda(y, \eta; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\eta.$$

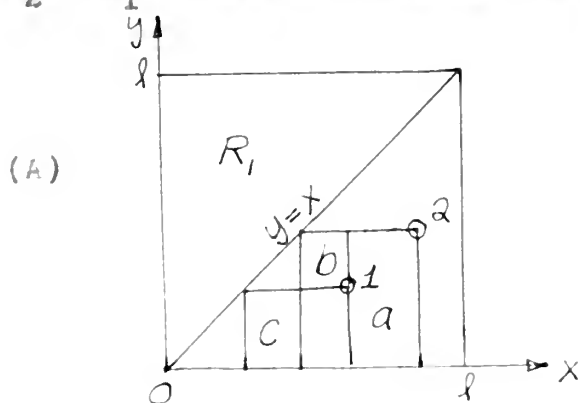
For  $(x, y) \in R_2$ , by (7.29), (7.30) and (7.31),

$$(7.32) \quad \left. \begin{aligned} |u_\lambda(x, y)| &\leq Lx^2 \\ |u_{\lambda, x}(x, y)| &\leq Lx \\ |u_{\lambda, y}(x, y)| &\leq L\{(x-y) + y\} \\ &\leq Lx \end{aligned} \right\} (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$$

i.e. the sequences  $\{u_\lambda\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda, x}\}$  and  $\{u_{\lambda, y}\}$  are uniformly bounded on  $R_2$ .

Given two points,  $(x_1, y_1) \in R_2$ ,  $(x_2, y_2) \in R_2$ , we may assume, without loss, that  $x_1 \leq x_2$ . Then, if  $y_1 \leq y_2$ , let us assume that  $y_2 < x_1$ . Then by integrating over the regions a, b and c in

diagram (A) we obtain



... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..

... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..

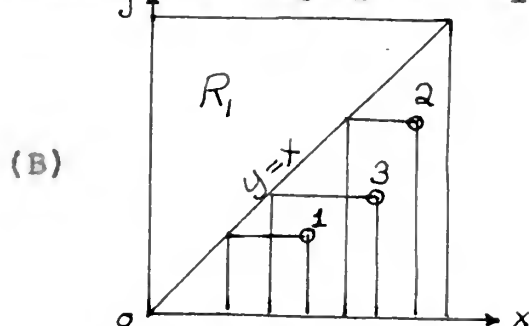
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..

... ..

...

... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..

$$(7.33) \quad |u_{\lambda}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda}(x_1, y_1)| \leq L \{ \lambda(x_2 - x_1) + 2\lambda(y_2 - y_1) \}.$$

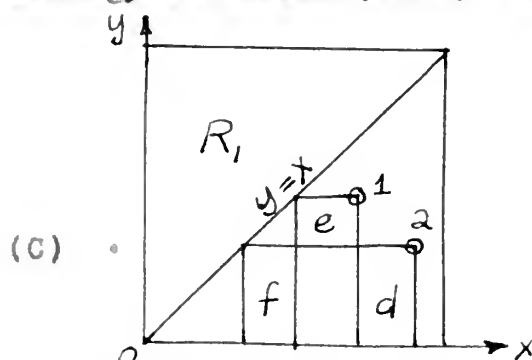


If  $y_2 \geq x_1$  we may always choose a point  $(x_3, y_3)$  with  $y_2 < x_3 < x_2$  and  $y_1 < y_3 < x_1$  (as in diagram (B)). Then, as above,

$$|u_{\lambda}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda}(x_3, y_3)| \leq L \{ \lambda(x_2 - x_3) + 2\lambda(y_2 - y_3) \}$$

$$|u_{\lambda}(x_3, y_3) - u_{\lambda}(x_1, y_1)| \leq L \{ \lambda(x_3 - x_1) + 2\lambda(y_3 - y_1) \}.$$

Adding, we obtain (7.33). Further if  $y_1 \geq y_2$ , we have the case



shown in diagram (C). Here by integrating over the regions d, e and f we again obtain (7.33). Hence the sequence

$\{u_{\lambda}\}$  is equicontinuous on  $R_2$ .

Now, for  $(x, y_2) \in R_2$ ,  $(x, y_1) \in R_2$ , by (7.30)

$$(7.34) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x, y_2) - u_{\lambda, x}(x, y_1)| \leq L|y_2 - y_1|.$$

Likewise, for  $(x_2, y) \in R_2$ ,  $(x_1, y) \in R_2$ , by (7.31)

$$(7.35) \quad |u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, y)| \leq L|x_2 - x_1|.$$

Moreover, by precisely the same argument as that used to prove Lemma 2 of Chapter II, given  $\mu > 0$ ,  $\zeta > 0$ , there exist  $\delta > 0$ ,  $N > 0$ , depending only on  $\mu$  and  $\zeta$ , respectively, such that for  $(x_2, y) \in R_2$ ,  $(x_1, y) \in R_2$ ,

$$\lambda > N \text{ and } |x_2 - x_1| < \delta$$

1. *Phragmites australis* (Cav.) Trin. ex Steud.

20

10

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21 22 23 24 25 26 27 28 29 30 31 32 33 34 35 36 37 38 39 40 41 42 43 44 45 46 47 48 49 50 51 52 53 54 55 56 57 58 59 60 61 62 63 64 65 66 67 68 69 70 71 72 73 74 75 76 77 78 79 80 81 82 83 84 85 86 87 88 89 90 91 92 93 94 95 96 97 98 99 100 101 102 103 104 105 106 107 108 109 110 111 112 113 114 115 116 117 118 119 120 121 122 123 124 125 126 127 128 129 130 131 132 133 134 135 136 137 138 139 140 141 142 143 144 145 146 147 148 149 150 151 152 153 154 155 156 157 158 159 160 161 162 163 164 165 166 167 168 169 170 171 172 173 174 175 176 177 178 179 180 181 182 183 184 185 186 187 188 189 190 191 192 193 194 195 196 197 198 199 200 201 202 203 204 205 206 207 208 209 210 211 212 213 214 215 216 217 218 219 220 221 222 223 224 225 226 227 228 229 230 231 232 233 234 235 236 237 238 239 240 241 242 243 244 245 246 247 248 249 250 251 252 253 254 255 256 257 258 259 260 261 262 263 264 265 266 267 268 269 270 271 272 273 274 275 276 277 278 279 280 281 282 283 284 285 286 287 288 289 290 291 292 293 294 295 296 297 298 299 300 301 302 303 304 305 306 307 308 309 310 311 312 313 314 315 316 317 318 319 320 321 322 323 324 325 326 327 328 329 330 331 332 333 334 335 336 337 338 339 340 341 342 343 344 345 346 347 348 349 350 351 352 353 354 355 356 357 358 359 360 361 362 363 364 365 366 367 368 369 370 371 372 373 374 375 376 377 378 379 380 381 382 383 384 385 386 387 388 389 390 391 392 393 394 395 396 397 398 399 400 401 402 403 404 405 406 407 408 409 410 411 412 413 414 415 416 417 418 419 420 421 422 423 424 425 426 427 428 429 430 431 432 433 434 435 436 437 438 439 440 441 442 443 444 445 446 447 448 449 450 451 452 453 454 455 456 457 458 459 460 461 462 463 464 465 466 467 468 469 470 471 472 473 474 475 476 477 478 479 480 481 482 483 484 485 486 487 488 489 490 491 492 493 494 495 496 497 498 499 500 501 502 503 504 505 506 507 508 509 510 511 512 513 514 515 516 517 518 519 520 521 522 523 524 525 526 527 528 529 530 531 532 533 534 535 536 537 538 539 540 541 542 543 544 545 546 547 548 549 550 551 552 553 554 555 556 557 558 559 560 561 562 563 564 565 566 567 568 569 570 571 572 573 574 575 576 577 578 579 580 581 582 583 584 585 586 587 588 589 590 591 592 593 594 595 596 597 598 599 600 601 602 603 604 605 606 607 608 609 610 611 612 613 614 615 616 617 618 619 620 621 622 623 624 625 626 627 628 629 630 631 632 633 634 635 636 637 638 639 640 641 642 643 644 645 646 647 648 649 650 651 652 653 654 655 656 657 658 659 660 661 662 663 664 665 666 667 668 669 670 671 672 673 674 675 676 677 678 679 680 681 682 683 684 685 686 687 688 689 690 691 692 693 694 695 696 697 698 699 700 701 702 703 704 705 706 707 708 709 710 711 712 713 714 715 716 717 718 719 720 721 722 723 724 725 726 727 728 729 730 731 732 733 734 735 736 737 738 739 740 741 742 743 744 745 746 747 748 749 750 751 752 753 754 755 756 757 758 759 760 761 762 763 764 765 766 767 768 769 770 771 772 773 774 775 776 777 778 779 780 781 782 783 784 785 786 787 788 789 790 791 792 793 794 795 796 797 798 799 800 801 802 803 804 805 806 807 808 809 810 811 812 813 814 815 816 817 818 819 820 821 822 823 824 825 826 827 828 829 830 831 832 833 834 835 836 837 838 839 840 841 842 843 844 845 846 847 848 849 850 851 852 853 854 855 856 857 858 859 860 861 862 863 864 865 866 867 868 869 870 871 872 873 874 875 876 877 878 879 880 881 882 883 884 885 886 887 888 889 890 891 892 893 894 895 896 897 898 899 900 901 902 903 904 905 906 907 908 909 910 911 912 913 914 915 916 917 918 919 920 921 922 923 924 925 926 927 928 929 930 931 932 933 934 935 936 937 938 939 940 941 942 943 944 945 946 947 948 949 950 951 952 953 954 955 956 957 958 959 960 961 962 963 964 965 966 967 968 969 970 971 972 973 974 975 976 977 978 979 980 981 982 983 984 985 986 987 988 989 990 991 992 993 994 995 996 997 998 999 1000 1001 1002 1003 1004 1005 1006 1007 1008 1009 1010 1011 1012 1013 1014 1015 1016 1017 1018 1019 1020 1021 1022 1023 1024 1025 1026 1027 1028 1029 1030 1031 1032 1033 1034 1035 1036 1037 1038 1039 1040 1

1. A. 1

10. 11. 1957

100

$$\Rightarrow$$

$$(7.36) \quad |u_{\lambda,x}(x_2,y) - u_{\lambda,x}(x_1,y)| \leq K \int_0^y |u_{\lambda,x}(x_2,\eta) - u_{\lambda,x}(x_1,\eta)| d\eta + \mu + \xi.$$

Thus by (7.34), (7.36) and Lemma 1, Chapter II, the sequence

$\{u_{\lambda,x}\}$  is equicontinuous on  $R_2$ .

We need the following refinement of the argument in order to show that the sequence  $\{u_{\lambda,y}\}$  is equicontinuous on  $R_2$ :

Let us suppose  $(x,y_2) \in R_2$ ,  $(x,y_1) \in R_2$ . Without loss, we may assume that  $x \geq y_2 \geq y_1$ . Then

$$\begin{aligned} & u_{\lambda,y}(x,y_2) - u_{\lambda,y}(x,y_1) \\ &= \int_{y_2}^x [g_{\lambda}(\xi, y_2; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) - g_{\lambda}(\xi, y_1; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y})] d\xi \\ (7.37) \quad & - \int_{y_1}^{y_2} g_{\lambda}(\xi, y_1; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) d\xi \\ & - \int_0^{y_1} [g_{\lambda}(y_2, \eta; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) - g_{\lambda}(y_1, \eta; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y})] d\eta \\ & - \int_{y_1}^{y_2} g_{\lambda}(y_2, \eta; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) d\eta \end{aligned}$$

We have just proved that the sequences  $\{u_{\lambda}\}$  and  $\{u_{\lambda,x}\}$  are equicontinuous on  $R_2$ . The sequence  $\{g_{\lambda}\}$  is certainly equicontinuous on  $E'$ . Hence, considering (7.36), given  $\mu > 0$ , there exists  $\delta > 0$ , depending upon  $\mu$  alone, such that  $|y_2 - y_1| < \delta$

$$\Rightarrow$$

$$(7.38) \quad \left| \int_0^{y_1} [g_{\lambda}(y_2, \eta; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) - g_{\lambda}(y_1, \eta; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y})] d\eta \right| < \mu,$$

$$(7.39) \quad \left| \int_{y_2}^x [g_{\lambda}(\xi, y_2; u_{\lambda}(\xi, y_2); u_{\lambda,x}(\xi, y_2), \underline{u_{\lambda,y}(\xi, y_2)}} - g_{\lambda}(\xi, y_1; u_{\lambda}(\xi, y_1); u_{\lambda,x}(\xi, y_1), \underline{u_{\lambda,y}(\xi, y_1)}})] d\xi \right| < \mu,$$

357

12. 10. 1991

*Journal of Management Education* 36(7) 809–824

[illegible]

2

for  $\lambda = 1, 2, \dots$ .

Also, since  $\{g_\lambda\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} f$  on  $B'$ , given  $\zeta > 0$ , there exists  $N > 0$ , depending upon  $\zeta$  alone, such that  $\lambda > N$

$\Rightarrow$

$$(7.40) \left| \int_{y_2}^x [g_\lambda - f](\xi, y_1; u_\lambda(\xi, y_1); u_{\lambda, x}(\xi, y_1), \underline{u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, y_2)}) d\xi \right| < \zeta,$$

$$\left| \int_{y_2}^x [f - g_\lambda](\xi, y_1; u_\lambda(\xi, y_1); u_{\lambda, x}(\xi, y_1), \underline{u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, y_1)}) d\xi \right| < \zeta.$$

By hypothesis 2)',

$$(7.41) \left| \int_{y_2}^x [f(\xi, y_1; u_\lambda(\xi, y_1); u_{\lambda, x}(\xi, y_1), \underline{u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, y_2)}) - f(\xi, y_1; u_\lambda(\xi, y_1); u_{\lambda, x}(\xi, y_1), \underline{u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, y_1)})] d\xi \right| \\ \leq \int_{y_2}^x K |u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, y_2) - u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, y_1)| d\xi.$$

Moreover, since  $|g_\lambda| \leq L$ , ( $\lambda = 1, 2, \dots$ ),

$$(7.42) \left| \int_{y_1}^{y_2} g_\lambda(\xi, y_1; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\xi \right| \leq L |y_2 - y_1| \\ \left| \int_{y_1}^{y_2} g_\lambda(y_2, \eta; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\eta \right| \leq L |y_2 - y_1|.$$

Thus by equations (7.37) through (7.41), given  $\mu > 0$ ,  $\zeta > 0$ , there exists  $\delta > 0$ ,  $N > 0$ , depending only upon  $\mu$  and  $\zeta$ , respectively, such that  $|y_2 - y_1| < \delta$  and  $\lambda > N$

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

PHYSICS DEPARTMENT  
5300 S. DICKINSON AVE.  
CHICAGO, ILL. 60637

→

RECEIVED

APR 11 1964

PHYSICS DEPARTMENT

5300 S. DICKINSON AVE.

CHICAGO, ILL. 60637

APR 11 1964

PHYSICS DEPARTMENT

5300 S. DICKINSON AVE.

CHICAGO, ILL. 60637



$\Rightarrow$

$$(7.43) \quad |u_{\lambda,y}(x,y_2) - u_{\lambda,y}(x,y_1)| \\ \leq K \int_{y_2}^x |u_{\lambda,y}(\xi,y_2) - u_{\lambda,y}(\xi,y_1)| d\xi \\ + 4\mu + 2\zeta.$$

By Lemma 1, Chapter II, inequalities (7.35) and (7.43) imply that the sequence  $\{u_{\lambda,y}\}$  is equicontinuous on  $R_2$ .

From this point on the proof is practically identical with that for Theorem 1a. Since the sequences  $\{u_\lambda\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda,x}\}$  and  $\{u_{\lambda,y}\}$  are uniformly bounded and equicontinuous on  $R_2$ , we may apply ARZELA's theorem to obtain a subsequence of each, uniformly convergent on  $R_2$ . Hence, as for Theorem 1a, by successive extractions of subsequences we obtain a subsequence  $\{u_\lambda^*\}$  of  $\{u_\lambda\}$  converging uniformly on  $R_2$  to a solution  $u$  of the integral equation

$$u(x,y) = \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi,\eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\eta,$$

and such that for  $(x,y) \in R_2$

$(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)) \in E$ . The proof for Theorem 10a is now complete.

Following E. PICARD [7] p. 136 and p. 139, we show that the general statement of the mixed boundary conditions, (i.e. where  $u$  is prescribed along two intersecting curves, one characteristic and the other nowhere characteristic), can be reduced to the statement found in Theorems 10 and 10a, (i.e. where  $u(x,0) = u(x,x) = 0$  for  $x \in [0,1]$ ).

First, let us suppose that we prescribe



$$(7.44) \quad \begin{cases} u(x,0) = \varphi(x) \\ u(x,x) = \psi(x) \end{cases}$$

for  $x \in [0, l]$ ,  $\varphi(x)$  and  $\psi(x) \in C^1[0, l]$  and  $\varphi(0) = \psi(0)$ .

Consider

$$(7.45) \quad w(x,y) = \varphi(x) + \psi(y) - \varphi(y).$$

We have  $w_{xy} = 0$  on  $R$  while

$$(7.46) \quad \begin{cases} w(x,0) = \varphi(x) \\ w(x,x) = \psi(x) \end{cases}$$

for  $x \in [0, l]$ . Hence, instead of the problem with non-homogeneous boundary conditions (7.44), by setting

$$(7.47) \quad v = u - w$$

we may consider the problem

$$(7.48) \quad \begin{cases} v_{xy} = f(x,y; v+w, v_x+w_x, v_y+w_y) \\ v(x,0) = 0 \\ v(x,x) = 0, \end{cases}$$

a problem of the type covered by Theorems 10 and 10a.

Second, suppose we prescribe  $u$  along the characteristic  $y = 0$  and the nowhere characteristic curve  $y = F(x)$ , where  $F(x) \in C^1([0, l_1])$ ,  $F'(x) \neq 0$  for  $x \in [0, l_1]$  and  $F(0) = 0$ .

The coordinate transformation

$$(7.49) \quad \begin{cases} \bar{x} = F(x) \\ \bar{y} = y \end{cases}$$

reduces the curve  $y = F(x)$  to the diagonal  $\bar{y} = \bar{x}$  since the inverse  $F^{-1}$  exists and is of class  $C^1$  on  $[0, F(l_1)]$ . Moreover,

$$(7.50) \quad u_{xy} = F'(x) \bar{u}_{\bar{x}\bar{y}}.$$



Since  $F'(x) \neq 0$ , the form of the differential equation remains unchanged and we reduce the problem to one with initial conditions in the form (7.44).

Thus the general statement of the mixed boundary value problem for

$$(7.3) \quad u_{xy} = f(x, y; u; u_x, u_y)$$

can be reduced to the form treated in Theorems 10 and 10a. We note that whatever continuity and Lipschitz conditions are satisfied by (7.3) before transformation (7.49) and substitution (7.47) are satisfied as well after these operations are performed.

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

...

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

## CHAPTER VIII

EXISTENCE THEOREMS BASED ON THE  
CONCEPT OF UPPER AND LOWER BOUNDING FUNCTIONS

For the ordinary differential equation  $y' = f(x, y)$  with  $y(x_0) = y_0$ , O. PERRON [18], assuming  $f$  merely continuous, gives an existence proof that is entirely independent of the classical proofs and contains them as special cases. He bases his proof on the concept of under and over functions, defining  $\varphi(x)$  to be an under function if  $\varphi(x_0) = y_0$  and

$$(8.1) \quad D_{\pm} \varphi(x) < f(x, \varphi(x))$$

and defining  $\psi(x)$  to be an over function if  $\psi(x_0) = y_0$  and

$$(8.2) \quad D_{\pm} \psi(x) > f(x, \psi(x)).$$

The solutions are found to lie between the upper limit function  $g$  of the set of underfunctions and the lower limit function  $G$  of the set of overfunctions,  $g$  and  $G$  themselves being solutions.

H. H. KILMER [4] shows that PERRON's proof will not carry over directly to apply to a system.

$$(8.3) \quad y_i' = f_i(x, y_1, \dots, y_n) \quad , \quad (i = 1, \dots, n).$$

However, he is able to extend the classical theorem, obtaining a statement which is similar to that of PERRON and which reduces to the direct analogue of PERRON's theorem in the particular case where the functions  $f_i$  are monotonically increasing in the arguments  $y_1, \dots, y_n$ .





In this chapter we return to the characteristic initial value problem for

$$(8.4) \quad u_{xy} = f(x, y; u; u_x, u_y).$$

We obtain results similar to those of MULLER above. In the following Theorems 11 and 11a we improve the statements of Theorems 1 and 1a, Chapter II, by the introduction of upper and lower bounding functions  $\Omega$  and  $\omega$ .

Theorem 11 (11a)

$$1) \quad f(x, y; u; p, q) \in C(T), \quad T: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq l \\ \omega(x, y) \leq u \leq \Omega(x, y) \\ \omega_x(x, y) \leq p \leq \Omega_x(x, y) \\ \omega_y(x, y) \leq q \leq \Omega_y(x, y) \end{cases}$$

2) (2)')  $f$  is Lipschitzian (partially Lipschitzian) on  $T$  (as defined in Theorems 1 and 1a).

3) The functions  $\omega(x, y)$  and  $\Omega(x, y) \in C^1(H)$ ,  $H: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq l \end{cases}$  with  $\omega_{xy}(x, y)$  and  $\Omega_{xy}(x, y) \in C(H)$ . Moreover,

$$\omega(x, 0) = \Omega(x, 0) = 0 \quad \text{for } x \in [0, l],$$

$$\omega(0, y) = \Omega(0, y) = 0 \quad \text{for } y \in [0, l],$$

and, for each  $(x, y) \in H$ ,

$$(8.5) \quad \omega_{xy}(x, y) \leq \min_{(x, y)} [f(x, y; u; p, q)],$$

$$(8.6) \quad \Omega_{xy}(x, y) \geq \max_{(x, y)} [f(x, y; u; p, q)]$$

where



$$(8.7) \quad s(x,y): \begin{cases} x = x \\ y = y \\ \omega(x,y) \leq u \leq \Omega(x,y) \\ \omega_x(x,y) \leq p \leq \Omega_x(x,y) \\ \omega_y(x,y) \leq q \leq \Omega_y(x,y) \end{cases}$$

$\Rightarrow$  4) (4)' There exists one and only one (at least one) function

$u(x,y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{xy} \in C(R)$  such that for each  $(x,y) \in R$  the point

$(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y) u_y(x,y)) \in T$ , and

$$u_{xy}(x,y) = f(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)),$$

$$u(x,0) = u(0,y) = 0 \quad \text{for each } (x,y) \in R.$$

### Proof

We extend the domain of definition of the function  $f$  over  $T$

$$\text{to } B': \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq l \\ -\infty < u < \infty \\ -\infty < p < \infty \\ -\infty < q < \infty \end{cases} \quad \text{by defining } f(x,y; u; p,q)$$

$$= f(x,y; \bar{u}; \bar{p}, \bar{q}), \text{ where}$$

$$\bar{u} = u \text{ if } \omega(x,y) \leq u \leq \Omega(x,y), \quad \bar{p} = p \text{ if } \omega_x(x,y) \leq p \leq \Omega_x(x,y),$$

$$(2.8) \quad \bar{u} = \omega(x,y) \text{ if } u < \omega(x,y) \quad \bar{p} = \omega_x(x,y) \text{ if } p < \omega_x(x,y)$$

$$\bar{u} = \Omega(x,y) \text{ if } \Omega(x,y) < u \quad \bar{p} = \Omega_x(x,y) \text{ if } \Omega_x(x,y) < p$$

$$\text{and} \quad \bar{q} = q \text{ if } \omega_y(x,y) \leq q \leq \Omega_y(x,y)$$

$$\bar{q} = \omega_y(x,y) \text{ if } q < \omega_y(x,y)$$

$$\bar{q} = \Omega_y(x,y) \text{ if } \Omega_y(x,y) < q.$$

By definition (2.8),  $f$  is uniformly continuous and uniformly bounded in  $B'$ . Moreover, by hypothesis 2)(2)' and (2.8)  $f$  satisfies a Lipschitz (partial Lipschitz) condition in  $B'$ .

1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.

1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.

1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.

Hence, by Theorem 1 (1a) Chapter II, there exists one and only one (at least one) function satisfying conclusion 4)(4)' except that for  $(x,y) \in R$  we are assured only that the point  $(x,y;u(x,y);u_x(x,y),u_y(x,y)) \in S'$ . To complete the proof we must show that this point actually lies in  $T$ ; i.e. we must show that for each  $(x,y) \in R$ ,

$$(8.9) \quad \begin{cases} \omega(x,y) \leq u(x,y) \leq \Omega(x,y) \\ \omega_x(x,y) \leq u_x(x,y) \leq \Omega_x(x,y) \\ \omega_y(x,y) \leq u_y(x,y) \leq \Omega_y(x,y) \end{cases}.$$

To accomplish this, we first prove the following lemma:

Lemma 3    i)  $\omega_{xy}(x,y) \leq u_{xy}(x,y)$     for all  $(x,y) \in R$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \begin{array}{ll} \omega(x,y) \leq u(x,y) & " \\ \omega_x(x,y) \leq u_x(x,y) & " \\ \omega_y(x,y) \leq u_y(x,y) & " \end{array} ,$$

ii)  $\Omega_{xy}(x,y) \geq u_{xy}(x,y)$     for all  $(x,y) \in R$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \begin{array}{ll} \Omega(x,y) \geq u(x,y) & " \\ \Omega_x(x,y) \geq u_x(x,y) & " \\ \Omega_y(x,y) \geq u_y(x,y) & " \end{array} .$$

Proof: For i),

$$\omega(x,y) = \int_0^x dx \int_0^y \omega_{xy} dy \leq \int_0^x dx \int_0^y u_{xy} dy = u(x,y)$$

$$\omega_x(x,y) = \int_0^y \omega_{xy} dy \leq \int_0^y u_{xy} dy = u_x(x,y)$$

$$\omega_y(x,y) = \int_0^x \omega_{xy} dx \leq \int_0^x u_{xy} dx = u_y(x,y).$$

The proof for ii) is analogous.

101

1. The first part of the report is devoted to a general  
description of the project and its objectives. It is  
followed by a detailed description of the methods used  
in the study. The third part of the report is devoted  
to a description of the results of the study. The  
fourth part of the report is devoted to a discussion  
of the results and their implications. The fifth part  
of the report is devoted to a conclusion.

The results of the study show that the  
project has been successful in achieving its  
objectives. The methods used in the study  
have been found to be effective and reliable.

The results of the study have important  
implications for the field of research.

The project has been successful in achieving its  
objectives. The methods used in the study  
have been found to be effective and reliable.

To prove (3.9) it only remains to verify that hypothesis i) and ii) of Lemma 3 are satisfied by  $u$ . By hypothesis 3) and definition (3.8), for each  $(x, y) \in R$ ,

$$\begin{aligned}\omega_{xy}(x, y) &\leq \min_{S(x, y)} [f(x, y; u; p, q)] \\ &\leq f(x, y; u(x, y); u_x(x, y), u_y(x, y)) \\ &= u_{xy}(x, y)\end{aligned}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned}\Omega_{xy}(x, y) &\geq \max_{S(x, y)} [f(x, y; u; p, q)] \\ &\geq f(x, y; u(x, y); u_x(x, y), u_y(x, y)) \\ &= u_{xy}(x, y).\end{aligned}$$

Thus, by Lemma 3, requirement (3.9) is satisfied for each  $(x, y) \in R$  and the proof of Theorems 11 and 11a is complete.

It is evident upon inspection of Theorems 11 and 11a that if, instead of homogeneous initial conditions, we prescribe

$$u(x, 0) = U(x) \quad \text{with } U(x) \in C'([0, \ell]),$$

$$u(0, y) = V(y) \quad \text{with } V(y) \in C'([0, \ell]),$$

where  $U(0) = V(0)$ , then we must require

$$\omega(x, 0) = \Omega(x, 0) = U(x),$$

$$\omega(0, y) = \Omega(0, y) = V(y).$$

The proof then goes through as before.

The following example is an illustration of Theorem 11:

#### Example 4

or the problem

1. The first part of the report  
describes the general situation  
of the country in 1950.  
The second part describes the  
situation in 1951.

3. The third part describes the  
situation in 1952.  
The fourth part describes the  
situation in 1953.  
The fifth part describes the  
situation in 1954.  
The sixth part describes the  
situation in 1955.



$$(8.10) \quad u_{xy} = (2^{1/m} - u_x)^{1/m+1}, \quad u(x,0) = u(0,y) = 0,$$

we may readily verify that

$$(8.11) \quad \omega(x,y) = \left(\frac{1}{m+1}\right)^{1/m+1} \cdot 2^{1/m(m+1)} xy$$

and

$$(8.12) \quad \Omega(x,y) = 2^{1/m(m+1)} xy$$

satisfy the hypotheses of Theorem 11 for all  $x \geq 0$  and

$$0 \leq y \leq C_m^* = \frac{m}{m+1} 2^{1/m+1}$$

In Chapter II we obtained the exact solution

$$(2.42) \quad u(x,y) = x \left\{ 2^{1/m} - \left[ \frac{m}{m+1} (C_m^* - y) \right]^{m+1/m} \right\}$$

where

$$(2.43) \quad C_m^* = \frac{m+1}{m} 2^{1/m+1}$$

is a branch point of the solution. We observe that as  $m$  increases indefinitely  $\omega$  and  $\Omega$  approach  $u$  from below and above, respectively, while  $C_m^*$  approaches  $C_m$  from below.

We see from this example that it is possible to obtain approximate solutions, with known limits of error, and to locate singularities in the actual solution by use of Theorem 11, provided that suitable functions  $\omega$  and  $\Omega$  can be obtained. For problems where explicit solutions cannot be obtained in "closed form", the procedure is to alter the right-hand side of the equation

$$u_{xy} = F(x,y; u; u_x, u_y)$$

so that an explicit solution of the altered equation can be ob-



tained satisfying the boundary conditions. This may lead to functions  $\omega$  and  $\Omega$  satisfying the hypotheses of Theorem 11. (See W. W. WHYBURN [19] and [20].) The motivation for equations (3.11) and (3.12) of Example 4 is now evident.

When we consider the possibility of applying, as explained below, the PERRON method using under and over functions to the characteristic initial value problem under consideration, we find the situation much the same as that in the case of a system of first order ordinary differential equations. We arrive at the unsatisfactory state of affairs wherein there is no assurance that the under functions remain below the over functions throughout the entire region on which a solution is known to exist. In fact, we shall presently give an example where an under function exceeds an over function within the domain of existence of a solution.

Recalling inequalities (3.1) and (3.2), we may express the application of the PERRON method as follows: We require both the under and over functions to satisfy the given characteristic initial conditions and to be continuously differentiable and to possess a mixed second derivative at each point of the domain  $R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq 1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq 1 \end{cases}$ . We further stipulate that each under function,  $\varphi$ , shall satisfy

$$(3.13) \quad \varphi_{xy}(x,y) < f(x,y; \varphi(x,y); \varphi_x(x,y), \varphi_y(x,y)),$$

and that each over function,  $\psi$ , shall satisfy

$$(3.14) \quad \psi_{xy}(x,y) > f(x,y; \psi(x,y); \psi_x(x,y), \psi_y(x,y))$$

for each  $(x,y) \in R$ .

at the time of the ...

... of the ...

... of the ...

... of the ...

... of the ...

... of the ...

... of the ...

... of the ...

... of the ...

... of the ...

... of the ...

... of the ...

... of the ...

... of the ...

Analogous arguments to those used by PERRON for the ordinary differential equation  $y' = f(x, y)$  lead to the inequalities

$$\begin{aligned}\varphi_x(0, y) &< \psi_x(0, y) & \text{for } 0 < y \leq \ell, \\ \varphi_y(x, 0) &< \psi_y(x, 0) & \text{for } 0 < x \leq \ell,\end{aligned}$$

for any under function  $\varphi$  and any over function  $\psi$ . These inequalities, together with the requirement that  $\varphi$  and  $\psi$  satisfy the characteristic initial data on the positive  $x$  and  $y$  axes, insure that  $\psi > \varphi$  in a sufficiently small "L" shaped strip in the first quadrant adjacent to the initial characteristics. Unfortunately, this is inadequate as the following example demonstrates.

#### Example 5

Consider the problem

$$(8.15) \quad u_{xy} = 0, \quad u(x, 0) = u(0, y) = 0.$$

This problem has the unique solution  $u \equiv 0$  throughout the finite plane. Let

$$(8.16) \quad \begin{cases} \psi_{xy} = Ax - By^2 + C \\ \varphi_{xy} = -D, \end{cases}$$

where  $A$ ,  $B$ ,  $C$  and  $D$  are positive constants. By integration in (8.16) we may obtain functions  $\psi$  and  $\varphi$  satisfying the initial conditions of (8.15). Obviously,  $\varphi$  is an under function for all  $(x, y)$ . Moreover,  $\psi_{xy} > 0$  for all  $(x, y)$  lying in the portion of the first quadrant below the parabolic arc

$$y = +\sqrt{\frac{A}{B}x + \frac{C}{B}};$$



and hence  $\psi$  meets the requirements for an over function on a domain  $R_\ell$ :  $\begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \ell \\ 0 \leq y \leq \sqrt{\frac{C}{B}} \end{cases}$  where  $\ell$  is arbitrarily large but finite.

Defining  $h = \psi - \varphi$  we have

$$h_{xy}(x,y) = Ax - By^2 + C + D.$$

Since  $h(x,0) = h(0,y) = 0$ , we obtain by integration

$$h(x,y) = \frac{A}{2} x^2 y - \frac{B}{2} x^2 y^2 + (C+D) xy.$$

We note that  $h > 0$  in that portion of the first quadrant below the hyperbola branch

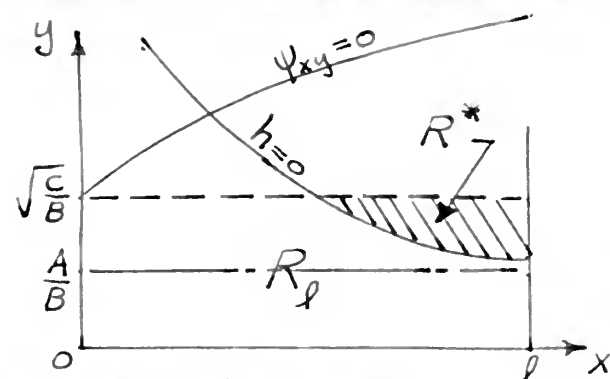
$$y = \frac{A}{B} + \frac{2(C+D)}{Bx}$$

while  $h < 0$  above this branch. From the diagram it is evident

that if we require

$$\frac{A}{B} < \sqrt{\frac{C}{B}}$$

then there exists a positive constant  $\ell$  such that within the corresponding domain  $R_\ell$  we have a



subregion  $R^*$  on which  $\varphi > \psi$ . Hence the KRON method is not directly applicable to this class of problems.

Returning to Theorems 11 and 11a, we observe that if, for fixed  $(x,y)$ ,  $f$  is a monotonically increasing function for the arguments  $u, v$  and  $q$ , then

$$\begin{aligned} f(x,y; \omega(x,y); \omega_x(x,y), \omega_y(x,y)) \\ = \min_{(x,y)} [f(x,y; u; v, q)], \end{aligned}$$

and

$$f(x,y; \Omega(x,y); \Omega_x(x,y), \Omega_y(x,y)) = \max_{(x,y)} [f(x,y; u; v, q)].$$

The first part of the proof is to show that  $\{ \mathbf{e}_1, \mathbf{e}_2, \dots, \mathbf{e}_n \}$  is a basis for  $\mathbb{R}^n$ .  
 We know that  $\mathbf{e}_1, \mathbf{e}_2, \dots, \mathbf{e}_n$  are linearly independent. To show they span  $\mathbb{R}^n$ , we need to show that any vector  $\mathbf{v} \in \mathbb{R}^n$  can be written as a linear combination of  $\mathbf{e}_1, \mathbf{e}_2, \dots, \mathbf{e}_n$ .

$$\mathbf{v} = \begin{pmatrix} v_1 \\ v_2 \\ \vdots \\ v_n \end{pmatrix} = v_1 \mathbf{e}_1 + v_2 \mathbf{e}_2 + \dots + v_n \mathbf{e}_n$$

This shows that  $\mathbf{v}$  is in the span of  $\mathbf{e}_1, \mathbf{e}_2, \dots, \mathbf{e}_n$ . Since  $\mathbf{v}$  was arbitrary, the set  $\{ \mathbf{e}_1, \mathbf{e}_2, \dots, \mathbf{e}_n \}$  spans  $\mathbb{R}^n$ .

Therefore,  $\{ \mathbf{e}_1, \mathbf{e}_2, \dots, \mathbf{e}_n \}$  is a basis for  $\mathbb{R}^n$ .

The second part of the proof is to show that  $\{ \mathbf{f}_1, \mathbf{f}_2, \dots, \mathbf{f}_n \}$  is also a basis for  $\mathbb{R}^n$ .  
 We know that  $\mathbf{f}_1, \mathbf{f}_2, \dots, \mathbf{f}_n$  are linearly independent. To show they span  $\mathbb{R}^n$ , we need to show that any vector  $\mathbf{w} \in \mathbb{R}^n$  can be written as a linear combination of  $\mathbf{f}_1, \mathbf{f}_2, \dots, \mathbf{f}_n$ .





In this case we may alter hypothesis 3) to require merely that

$$\begin{aligned}\omega_{xy}(x,y) &\leq f(x,y; \omega(x,y); \omega_x(x,y), \omega_y(x,y)) \\ \Omega_{xy}(x,y) &\geq f(x,y; \Omega(x,y); \Omega_x(x,y), \Omega_y(x,y))\end{aligned}$$

for each  $(x,y) \in R$ . This is the direct analogue to PERSON's theorem (see [13]) and corresponds to the previously mentioned result of MULLER for a system (8.3).

We close this chapter with the remark that Theorems 11 and 11a can be extended immediately in two ways. First, the method is directly applicable to the Cauchy problem. We require the functions  $\omega$  and  $\Omega$  to satisfy the Cauchy initial data and observe that the proof of Lemma 3 is essentially unchanged. Second, the method extends to apply to a system

$$u_{i,xy} = f_i(x,y; u_j; u_{j,x}, u_{j,y}), \quad (i = 1, \dots, n)$$

for both characteristic and Cauchy initial value prescriptions. The modifications in the hypotheses and proof for Theorems 11 and 11a are obvious.

—

25

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. P. PICARD, "Sur les méthodes d'approximations successives dans la théorie des équations différentielles," *Leçons sur la théorie générale des surfaces*, O. DARBOUX, vol. IV, Note I. (Paris 1896).
2. E. KAMKE, *Differentialgleichungen reeller Funktionen* (Leipzig 1930).
3. F. BRICHET - A. ROSENTHAL, *Encyclopédie der mathematischen Wissenschaften*, vol. II, C. 9c. pp. 1137-1137.
4. W. WILFF, "Über das Fundamentaltheorem in der Theorie der gewöhnlichen Differentialgleichungen," *Mathematische Zeitschrift*, vol. 25 (1927), pp. 619-643.
5. T. H. CROMBIE, "Note on the derivatives with respect to a parameter of the solutions of a system of differential equations," *Annals of Mathematics*, ser. 2, vol. 20 (1924-1925), p. 283.
6. J. JACOBI, *Cours d'analyse*, vol. I (Paris 1893).
7. P. PICARD, *Leçons sur les équations aux dérivées partielles* (Paris 1917).



8. E. COURSAT, "Sur un problème relatif à la théorie des équations, etc." (Second Mémoire), Annales de la Faculté de Toulouse, ser. 2, vol. 6 (1904), pp. 117-144.
9. E. K. LEVI, "Sopra un teorema di esistenza per le equazioni alle derivate parziali del secondo ordine," Annali di Matematica, ser. 3, vol. 18 (1911), pp. 287-333.
10. H. LEWY, "Ueber das Anfangswertproblem einer hyperbolischen nichtlinearen partiellen Differentialgleichungen zweiter Ordnung mit zwei unabhängigen Veränderlichen," Mathematische Annalen, vol. 98 (1928), pp. 179-191.
11. J. HADAMARD, Le problème de Cauchy (Paris 1932).
12. A. CINQUINI-CINQUE, "Intorno ad un sistema di equazioni alle derivate parziali del primo ordine," Rendiconti del Reale Istituto Lombardo, ser. 3, vol. 76 (1942-1943), pp. 177-184.
13. A. CINQUINI-CINQUE, "Sul problema di Cauchy per le equazioni del tipo iperbolico non lineari," Annali di Matematica, ser. 4, vol. 81 (1948), pp. 139-229.



14. C. NICCOLETTI, "Sull'estensione dei metodi di Picard e di Riemann ad una classe di equazioni a derivate parziali," Atti della Reale Accademia di Napoli, ser. 2, vol. 2, no. 2 (1896).
15. A. WINTNER, "On the exact value of the bound for the regularity of solutions of ordinary differential equations," American Journal of Mathematics, vol. 57, (1935), pp. 539-540.
16. G. FUBINI, "Alcuni nuovi problemi, che si presentano nella teoria delle equazioni alle derivate parziali," Atti della Reale Accademia di Torino, vol. 40 (1905), pp. 616-631.
17. R. COURANT-D. HILBERT, Methoden der mathematischen Physik, vol. II (Berlin 1937).
18. O. PERRON, "Ein neuer Existenzbeweis für die Integrale der Differentialgleichung  $y' = f(x, y)$ ," Mathematische Annalen, vol. 76 (1916), pp. 371-434.
19. A. H. WYNN, "Existence theorems for ordinary differential equations," Publications of the University of California at Los Angeles in Mathematical and Physical Sciences, vol. 1, no. 2 (1935) pp. 115-134.





20. W. E. WHYTEHEAD, "Over and under functions as related to differential equations," American Mathematical Monthly, vol. 47 (1940), pp. 1-10.

10. The first of these is the fact that the  
the first of these is the fact that the  
the first of these is the fact that the

ON THE EXISTENCE OF NOT NECESSARILY  
UNIQUE SOLUTIONS OF THE CLASSICAL HYPER-  
BOLIC BOUNDARY VALUE PROBLEMS FOR NON-  
LINEAR SECOND ORDER PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL  
EQUATIONS IN TWO INDEPENDENT VARIABLES.

By

Patrick Leehy

B.Sc., United States Naval Academy, 1942

Thesis

submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the  
Degree of Doctor of Philosophy in the Graduate Division  
of Applied Mathematics at Brown University

May, 1950.



VITA

Patrick Leehey was born at Waterloo, Iowa, October 27, 1921. He attended the College of Engineering, State University of Iowa 1938-1939. Attended the U. S. Naval Academy 1939-1942, receiving the degree of Bachelor of Science in 1942. He was commissioned as Ensign, U. S. Navy, 1942. Served with the U. S. Pacific Fleet 1942-1945. Attended the U. S. Naval Postgraduate School in the course in Naval Engineering Design 1946-1947. Attended Brown University in the Graduate Division of Applied Mathematics 1947-1950. Member of Sigma Xi. He holds the rank of Lieutenant, U.S. Navy.



## TABLE OF CONTENTS

| <u>Chapter</u> | <u>Notations</u>  | <u>Page</u> |
|----------------|---|-------------|
|                |   | <u>v</u>    |
| I              | Introduction . . . . .  | 1           |
| II             | The Characteristic Initial Value Problem for<br>$u_{xy} = f(x,y; u; u_x, u_y)$ . . . . .  | 11          |
| III            | The Cauchy Problem for<br>$u_{xy} = f(x,y; u; u_x, u_y)$ . . . . .                        | 36          |
| IV             | Existence Theorems for Canonical<br>Hyperbolic First Order Systems . . . . .              | 45          |
| V              | The Cauchy Problem for<br>$P(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0$ . . . . .                           | 54          |
| VI             | The Characteristic Initial Value Problem for<br>$P(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0$ . . . . .     | 67          |
| VII            | The Mixed Boundary Value Problem for<br>$u_{xy} = f(x,y; u; u_x, u_y)$ . . . . .          | 88          |
| VIII           | Existence Theorems Based on the Concept of<br>Upper and Lower Bounding Functions. . . . . | 107         |
|                | Bibliography . . . . .  | 117         |





## NOTATIONS

The following special notations will be used throughout this paper with the meanings as defined below. Other special notations used will be defined at the place where they are introduced.

$$R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq l \end{cases}$$

$\in$  is a member of; i.e. belongs to.

$R$  is the set of all ordered pairs  $(x, y)$ , (points) for which  $0 \leq x \leq l$  and  $0 \leq y \leq l$ .

$$f \in C(B)$$

$f$  is a member of the class of functions continuous on the set  $B$ .

$$g \in C'(H)$$

$g$  is a member of the class of functions continuously differentiable on the set  $H$ , (and similarly for higher degrees of differentiability.)

$$u_x$$

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}.$$

$$u_{\lambda, x}$$

$$\frac{\partial u_{\lambda}}{\partial x}.$$

$$\dot{x}$$

$\frac{dx}{d\tau}$  where  $\tau$  is a parameter along a path.

$$x \in [0, l]$$

$x$  belongs to the closed interval,  $0 \leq x \leq l$ .

$$\Rightarrow$$

implies.

$$\Leftrightarrow$$

implies and is implied by; i.e. if and only if.

$$\{e_{\lambda}\} (x, y; u; p, q)$$

a sequence of functions  $e_{\lambda}$ , ( $\lambda = 1, 2, \dots$ ), of arguments  $(x, y; u; p, q)$ .

$$\{e_{\lambda}\} \rightarrow f \text{ on } B$$

the sequence  $\{e_{\lambda}\}$  converges pointwise on the set  $B$  to the function  $f$ .



$\{g_\lambda\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} f \text{ on } B$

the sequence  $\{g_\lambda\}$  converges uniformly on the set  $B$  to the function  $f$ .

$D_\pm y$

the right(+) and left (-) hand derivatives of the function  $y$  at the point in question.



## CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTION

The purpose of this paper is to present a number of existence theorems pertaining to a class of non-linear second order partial differential equations in two independent variables of the general form

$$(1.1) \quad F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0,$$

where

$$(1.2) \quad p = u_x, \quad q = u_y, \quad r = u_{xx}, \quad s = u_{xy} \text{ and } t = u_{yy},$$

in the usual notation. We restrict our attention to those prescriptions of initial conditions for which integral surfaces exist such that the equation is of hyperbolic type thereon, i.e. the inequality

$$(1.3) \quad F_s^2 - 4 F_r F_t > 0$$

must be satisfied on the integral surface in a neighborhood of the initial data.

E. PICARD [1],[7]<sup>1</sup>, E. COUSAT [8], A.E. LEVI [9], H. LEWY [10], J. HADAMARD [11], M. CINQUINI-CIARRIO [12],[13], and others have

---

<sup>1</sup> The number in the bracket [ ] refers to the reference in the bibliography.

1912  
E. J. ...

...

...

...

...

...

developed existence theorems based on the method of successive approximations. Their concern has been to establish sufficient conditions for the existence of a unique solution. Retaining their restrictions on the initial data, we shall obtain sufficient conditions for the existence of at least one solution. The integrals of the equations we consider will not, in general, be unique.

The concept of characteristic curves in an integral surface plays an important role in all work in this field. We give two definitions of a characteristic curve, the first applicable when the curve is expressed in non-parametric form, the second when expressed in parametric form:

Definition 1

$$\gamma : \begin{cases} a \leq x \leq b \\ y = g(x) \end{cases} \quad \text{where } g \in C'([a,b]), \text{ or } \gamma : \begin{cases} x = h(y) \\ c \leq y \leq d \end{cases}$$

where  $h \in C'([c,d])$ , is a characteristic base curve (characteristic projection or, by usage, characteristic) for a particular integral surface  $J: u = u(x,y)$  of  $F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0 \iff$  for each  $(x,y)$

$$(1.4) \quad F_p dy^2 - F_s dy dx + F_t dx^2 = 0$$

Definition 1a

$$\gamma : \begin{cases} x = x(\tau) \\ y = y(\tau) \end{cases} \quad \text{for } \tau \in [0,1] \text{ and where } x,y \in C'([0,1]), \text{ is a}$$

characteristic base curve for a particular integral surface

$J: u = u(x,y)$  of  $F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0 \iff$  for each  $\tau \in [0,1]$

$$(1.5) \quad \begin{cases} 1) & F_p \dot{y}^2 - F_s \dot{y} \dot{x} + F_t \dot{x}^2 = 0 \\ 2) & \dot{x}^2 + \dot{y}^2 \neq 0. \end{cases}$$

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

THE DIVISION OF THE PHYSICAL SCIENCES

DEPARTMENT OF CHEMISTRY

RECEIVED

NOV 10 1964

1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964

NOV 10 1964



Under either definition  $\gamma$  is rectifiable and possesses a continuously turning tangent (see C. JORDAN[6], p. 100). The two definitions are equivalent in the following sense: We may convert  $\gamma$  expressed in non-parametric form into its parametric expression by setting  $x = \tau$ ,  $y = g(\tau)$ , or  $x = h(\tau)$ ,  $y = \tau$  as the case may be. That the converse is possible follows directly from condition 2) of Definition 1a and the Implicit Function Theorem. For, suppose at a point  $(x(\tau_0), y(\tau_0))$  of  $\gamma$  that  $\dot{x} \neq 0$ . Then in a vicinity of  $x_0 = x(\tau_0)$  the inverse relation  $\tau = \tau(x)$  exists and we may write

$$(1.6) \quad \gamma : y = y(\tau(x)) = g(x).$$

Similarly, where  $\dot{y} \neq 0$ , we may write

$$(1.7) \quad \gamma : x = x(\tau(y)) = h(y).$$

By condition 2), one of the two representations (1.6) or (1.7) is always possible in the vicinity of each point of  $\gamma$ .

#### Definition 2

$$\Gamma : \begin{array}{l} x = x(\tau) \\ y = y(\tau) \\ u = u(\tau) \end{array} \text{ for } \tau \in [0,1] \text{ and where } x, y, u \in C^1([0,1]),$$

a space curve lying in a particular integral surface  $J: u=u(x,y)$  of  $F(x,y,u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0$ , is called a characteristic curve in the integral surface  $J \iff$  the projection of  $\Gamma$  onto the  $xy$  plane is a characteristic projection for the integral surface  $J$ .



Under suitable hypotheses, by virtue of the hyperbolic condition (1.3), for any integral surface  $J: u=u(x,y)$  of  $F(x,y,u;p,q,r,s,t) = 0$ , equations (1.4) or (1.5) determine two one parameter families of characteristic curves lying in the integral surface  $J$ . Exactly one characteristic curve from each family passes through any given point  $(x_0, y_0, u(x_0, y_0))$  of the integral surface  $J$ ; and, moreover, the corresponding two characteristic base curves do not have a common tangent at  $(x_0, y_0)$ .

Along any curve, characteristic or otherwise, lying in the integral surface  $J$ , the following strip, or band, conditions

$$(1.8) \quad \dot{u} = p\dot{x} + q\dot{y}$$

$$(1.9) \quad \begin{cases} \dot{p} = r\dot{x} + s\dot{y} \\ \dot{q} = s\dot{x} + t\dot{y} \end{cases}$$

must be satisfied.

The modification of Definition 2 and conditions (1.8), (1.9) when the curve  $\Gamma$  is expressed in non-parametric form is obvious.

### Definition 3

$$S^1: \begin{cases} x=x(\tau) \\ y=y(\tau) \\ u=u(\tau) \\ p=p(\tau) \\ q=q(\tau) \end{cases} \text{ for } \tau \in [0,1] \text{ and where } x,y,u,p,q \in C'([0,1]).$$

is called a first order strip  $\iff$  for each  $\tau \in [0,1]$

$$(1.8) \quad \dot{u} = p\dot{x} + q\dot{y}$$

Suppose a particular integral surface  $J: u=u(x,y)$  of

Under multiple hypotheses, the value of the likelihood ratio  
 given (1.2) is not invariant under the group of transformations  
 $(1.1)$  = 1.1.1. In fact, the likelihood ratio is invariant  
 under the group of transformations (1.1) in the following sense:  
 if  $\theta$  is a parameter value, then the likelihood ratio is invariant  
 under the group of transformations (1.1) if and only if the  
 likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1).

It is clear that the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1) if and only if the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1).

It is clear that the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1) if and only if the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1).

It is clear that the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1) if and only if the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1).

|   |   |   |
|---|---|---|
| 1 | 1 | 1 |
| 2 | 2 | 2 |
| 3 | 3 | 3 |

It is clear that the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1) if and only if the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1).

It is clear that the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1) if and only if the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1).

It is clear that the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1) if and only if the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1).

It is clear that the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1) if and only if the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1).

It is clear that the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1) if and only if the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1).

It is clear that the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1) if and only if the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1).

It is clear that the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1) if and only if the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1).

It is clear that the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1) if and only if the likelihood ratio is invariant under the group of transformations (1.1).

$F(x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t) = 0$  has a contact of first order with the strip  $S^1$ . Then if  $\Gamma : \begin{cases} x=x(\tau) \\ y=y(\tau) \\ u=u(\tau) \end{cases}$  for  $\tau \in [0, 1]$  is a characteristic curve in the integral surface  $J$ , the strip  $S^1$  is called a characteristic first order strip for the integral surface  $J$ .

Definition 4

$$S^2 : \begin{cases} x=x(\tau) \\ y=y(\tau) \\ u=u(\tau) \\ p=p(\tau) \\ q=q(\tau) \\ r=r(\tau) \\ s=s(\tau) \\ t=t(\tau) \end{cases} \text{ for } \tau \in [0, 1] \text{ and where } x, y, u, p, q, r, s, t \in C^1([0, 1])$$

is called a second order strip  $\iff$  for each  $\tau \in [0, 1]$

$$(1.8) \quad \dot{u} = p\dot{x} + q\dot{y}$$

$$(1.9) \quad \begin{cases} \dot{p} = r\dot{x} + s\dot{y} \\ \dot{q} = s\dot{x} + t\dot{y} \end{cases}$$

If, moreover, equation (1.1) and conditions (1.3) and (1.5) are satisfied for each  $\tau \in [0, 1]$ , then  $S^1$  is called a characteristic second order strip.

Note in Definition 4 that since all the arguments of the functions involved in conditions (1.5) are known upon prescription of the strip  $S^2$ , we may determine whether or not the projection of corresponding space curve  $\Gamma : \begin{cases} x=x(\tau) \\ y=y(\tau) \\ u=u(\tau) \end{cases}$  for  $\tau \in [0, 1]$  is a characteristic projection without reference to any particular integral surface.

7

100

Definitions 3 and 4 can be readily modified to deal with the non-parametric case. See, for example, M. CINQUINI-CIBRARIO[13].

In Chapter 2 we consider the characteristic initial value problem for the equation

$$(1.10) \quad s = f(x, y; u; p, q)$$

and its extension to the system of equations

$$(1.11) \quad s_i = f_i(x, y; u_1, \dots, u_n; p_1, \dots, p_n, q_1, \dots, q_n) \\ (i=1, 2, \dots, n).$$

We modify the customary hypothesis that  $f$  be Lipschitzian, i.e. with respect to variables  $u$ ,  $p$  and  $q$ , to require that  $f$  be partially Lipschitzian, i.e. with respect to variables  $p$  and  $q$  only. We obtain existence of an integral  $u$  over the same closed domain as that obtained in the classical theory. Our integral, however, cannot be shown to be unique. This fact is demonstrated by an example. By further example, we show that the bounds obtained on the domain of existence are maximal bounds.

In Chapter 3 we apply the methods of Chapter 2 to the Cauchy problem for equation (1.10) and the extension to the system (1.11). The conclusions are similar to those obtained in Chapter 2.

The arguments in Chapter 4 serve to establish the equivalence (as defined therein) between the characteristic initial value and the Cauchy problems for the system (1.11) and the corresponding problems for a particular system of first order partial differential equations of the form

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO  
DEPARTMENT OF CHEMISTRY  
5301 SOUTH CAMPUS DRIVE  
CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60637

TO: DR. J. H. HARRIS  
FROM: DR. J. H. HARRIS

RE: [illegible]

[illegible text]



$$(1.12) \quad \begin{cases} \sum_{k=1}^n A_{ik} U_{uk}, x = C_i & (i = 1, 2, \dots, m < n) \\ \sum_{k=1}^n A_{ik} U_{uk}, y = C_i & (i = m+1, m+2, \dots, n) \end{cases}$$

where the  $A_{ik}, C_i$  are functions of  $x, y, u_1, u_2, \dots, u_n$ . The system (1.12) is termed a canonical hyperbolic system.

This equivalence has already been established by M. CINQUINI-CIBRARIO[12]. Under the restriction that the first partial derivatives of the functions  $A_{ik}, C_i$  be Lipschitzian with respect to all their arguments, she obtains her theorems on the existence and uniqueness of the system of functions  $U_i$  as the solution for the canonical hyperbolic system (1.12). We demonstrate that her reasoning establishing the equivalence does not depend upon the uniqueness of the solutions for either system (1.11) or system (1.12). Consequently, from our results in Chapters 2 and 3, we are able to remove the above Lipschitz condition entirely and obtain existence, but not uniqueness, for the solutions of the canonical hyperbolic system for both characteristic and Cauchy initial value prescriptions.

Following the attack of H. LEWY[10], in Chapter 5 we reduce the equation

$$(1.1) \quad F(x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t) = 0$$

to a system of so-called characteristic equations by means of a transformation to the characteristic base curves as coordinates. This system is shown to contain a canonical hyperbolic system.

111

... ..

We treat the Cauchy problem, i.e. to find an integral surface which has a second order contact with a prescribed second order strip. By virtue of a theorem by M. CINQUINI-CIERRARIO, stated in Chapter 4, LEWY'S work yields immediately the result that for  $F \in C'''$  in a suitable region, there exists a unique solution  $u \in C'''$  in a sufficiently small neighborhood of the initial curve. We again demonstrate that the equivalence of the problems is not dependent upon uniqueness of their respective solutions; and, hence, by requiring simply that  $F \in C''$  we obtain existence but not uniqueness.

In Chapter 6 we treat the characteristic initial value problem for equation (1.1). We follow a modification of H. LEWY'S method introduced by M. CINQUINI-CIERRARIO[13]. Here equation (1.1) is first transformed into the form

$$(1.13) \quad s = f(x, y; u; p, q; r, t).$$

A modified system of characteristic equations is obtained. This system also contains a canonical hyperbolic system. The theorems of Chapter 2 apply and we obtain results similar to those obtained in Chapter 5 for the Cauchy problem.

In Chapter 7 we treat the mixed boundary value problem for the equation

$$(1.10) \quad s = f(x, y; u; p, q),$$

i.e. the problem where any integral surface of (1.10) is required to pass through two space curves issuing from a point, with one of the curves being a characteristic on this surface and the other



curve having nowhere a characteristic projection. We show that for equation (1.10) there is no loss in generality if we assume the initial data to be

$$(1.14) \quad u(x,0) = u(x,x) = 0.$$

For  $f$  continuous, bounded and Lipschitzian, we prove that there exists one and only one integral surface of (1.10) satisfying (1.14) on a domain for which we prescribe explicit bounds. For  $f$  continuous, bounded and partially Lipschitzian, we find, by arguments analogous to those used in Chapters 2 and 3, that there exists at least one integral surface of (1.10) satisfying (1.14) on a domain for which we again prescribe the same type of explicit bounds.

In Chapter 3 we consider the characteristic initial value problem for equation (1.10) from a new point of view. Here, in order to extend the theorems of Chapter 2, we introduce the concept of upper and lower bounding functions for the solution (or solutions) of the problem. This idea was first used by O. PERRON [18] to obtain an existence proof for the problem

$$(1.15) \quad y' = f(x,y) \quad , \quad y(x_0) = y_0.$$

His proof is quite independent of the classical proofs.

H. WILDER [4] shows that PERRON's method has no direct analogue for a system

$$(1.16) \quad y_i' = f_i(x, y_1, \dots, y_n) \quad , \quad (i = 1, \dots, n).$$

He is able, however, to extend the classical theorem for a system (1.16) to obtain a theorem which reduces to the direct analogue to the PERRON theorem in the case where the  $f_i$  are monotonically increasing functions of the arguments  $y_1, \dots, y_n$ .



The extensions to the theorems of Chapter 2 which we obtain are similar to MÜLLER's conclusions for the system (1.16). Moreover, we demonstrate by example that the PERKON method has no direct analogue for the characteristic initial value problem for equation (1.10). We also give an example illustrating the theorems obtained in this chapter. Finally, we note that the Cauchy problem for equation (1.10) and the Cauchy and characteristic initial value problems for the system

$$(1.11) \quad \begin{aligned} z_i &= f_i(x, y; u_1, \dots, u_n; p_1, \dots, p_n, q_1, \dots, q_n) \\ &\quad (i = 1, \dots, n), \end{aligned}$$

may also be treated by the methods of this chapter.

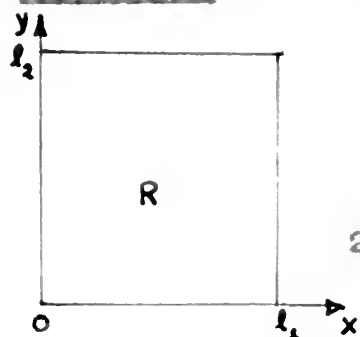
— *Journal of the American Medical Association*, 1997



## CHAPTER II

The Characteristic Initial Value Problem for  $u_{xy} = f(x, y; u; u_x, u_y)$ .

For convenience of reference we first state the following theorem, whose proof is based on the method of successive approximations. The proof of existence was given by É. PICARD [1], while the proof of uniqueness may be found in E. KAMKE [2] p. 410.

Theorem 1.

$$1) \quad f(x, y; u; p, q) \in C(B), B: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \\ -a \leq u \leq a \\ -b_1 \leq p \leq b_1 \\ -b_2 \leq q \leq b_2 \end{cases}$$

2)  $f$  is Lipschitzian on  $B$ ; i.e. there exists a positive constant  $K$  such that for

$$(x, y; u_1; p_1, q_1) \in B, (x, y; u_2; p_2, q_2) \in B,$$

$$|f(x, y; u_1; p_1, q_1) - f(x, y; u_2; p_2, q_2)| \leq K \{ |u_1 - u_2| + |p_1 - p_2| + |q_1 - q_2| \}$$

3)  $l_1/l_2 \leq a$ ,  $l_1 \leq b_2$ ,  $l_2 \leq b_1$ , where  $K = \max |f|$  on  $B$ .

→ 4) There exists one and only one function  $u(x, y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{xy}(x, y) \in C(R)$ , where  $B: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$ , such that for each  $(x, y) \in R$  the point  $(x, y; u(x, y); u_x(x, y), u_y(x, y)) \in B$ , and  $u_{xy}(x, y) = f(x, y; u(x, y); u_x(x, y), u_y(x, y))$ ,  $u(x, 0) = 0$ ,  $u(0, y) = 0$  for each  $(x, y) \in R$ .

— — —

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

CHICAGO, ILL.

1911

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

CHICAGO, ILL.

1911

1

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

CHICAGO, ILL.

1

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

CHICAGO, ILL.

1

Remarks. a) Suppose we prescribe  $u(x,0) = U(x)$ ,  $u(0,y) = V(y)$  where  $U(x) \in C'([0, \ell_1])$ ,  $V(y) \in C'([0, \ell_2])$  and  $U(0) = V(0)$ . Consider the function  $w(x,y) = U(x) + V(y) - U(0)$ . Clearly,  $w_{xy}(x,y) = 0$  and  $w(x,0) = U(x)$ ,  $w(0,y) = V(y)$  hence the function  $v = u - w$  must satisfy  $v_{xy} = f(x,y; v + w; v_x + w_x, v_y + w_y)$ ,  $v(x,0) = v(0,y) = 0$ , a problem of the type covered by Theorem 1.

b) Suppose  $f \in C$ , bounded and Lipschitzian in the domain  $B'$  :

$$\begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \ell_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq \ell_2 \\ -\infty < u < \infty \\ -\infty < p < \infty \\ -\infty < q < \infty \end{cases}$$

Then hypothesis 3) is immediately satisfied.

Following an approach used by M. MULLER [3] p. 632, in dealing with a system of first order ordinary differential equations, we are led to this improvement of the above theorem:

Theorem 1a. 1)

2)'  $f$  is partially Lipschitzian on  $B$ ; i.e. there exists a positive constant  $K$  such that for  $(x,y; u; p_1, q_1) \in B$ ,  $(x,y; u; p_2, q_2) \in B$ ,  $|f(x,y; u; p_1, q_1) - f(x,y; u; p_2, q_2)| \leq K \{ |p_1 - p_2| + |q_1 - q_2| \}$ .

3)

$\Rightarrow$  4)' There exists at least one function  $u(x,y) \in C'(R)$ ,  $u_{xy}(x,y) \in C(\cdot)$ , where  $\cdot : \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \ell_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq \ell_2 \end{cases}$  such that for each  $(x,y) \in R$

1. The first part of the document is a list of names and addresses. The names are written in a cursive script, and the addresses are written in a more formal, printed style. The list is organized into columns, with names in the first column and addresses in the second column.

2. The second part of the document is a list of names and addresses. The names are written in a cursive script, and the addresses are written in a more formal, printed style. The list is organized into columns, with names in the first column and addresses in the second column.

3. The third part of the document is a list of names and addresses. The names are written in a cursive script, and the addresses are written in a more formal, printed style. The list is organized into columns, with names in the first column and addresses in the second column.

4. The fourth part of the document is a list of names and addresses. The names are written in a cursive script, and the addresses are written in a more formal, printed style. The list is organized into columns, with names in the first column and addresses in the second column.

5. The fifth part of the document is a list of names and addresses. The names are written in a cursive script, and the addresses are written in a more formal, printed style. The list is organized into columns, with names in the first column and addresses in the second column.

6. The sixth part of the document is a list of names and addresses. The names are written in a cursive script, and the addresses are written in a more formal, printed style. The list is organized into columns, with names in the first column and addresses in the second column.

7. The seventh part of the document is a list of names and addresses. The names are written in a cursive script, and the addresses are written in a more formal, printed style. The list is organized into columns, with names in the first column and addresses in the second column.

8. The eighth part of the document is a list of names and addresses. The names are written in a cursive script, and the addresses are written in a more formal, printed style. The list is organized into columns, with names in the first column and addresses in the second column.

the point  $(x, y; u(x, y); u_x(x, y), u_y(x, y)) \in B$ , and  $u_{xy}(x, y) = f(x, y; u(x, y); u_x(x, y), u_y(x, y))$ ,  $u(x, 0) = 0$ ,  $u(0, y) = 0$  for each  $(x, y) \in R$ .

Proof. According to WEIERSTRASS' celebrated theorem [4] p. 1147, on polynomial approximations to a continuous function, there exists a sequence of polynomials,  $\{g_\lambda\}(x, y; u; p, q)$ , converging uniformly to  $f(x, y; u; p, q)$  on  $B$ . We designate this uniform convergence by the notation  $\{g_\lambda\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} f$  on  $B$ .

We extend  $f$  and the polynomials  $g_\lambda$ ,  $(\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$ , over the domain  $B$  to the domain  $B'$ , defined in the remark b) above, by the definition

$$f(x, y; u; p, q) = f(x, y; \bar{u}; \bar{p}, \bar{q})$$

$$g_\lambda(x, y; u; p, q) = g_\lambda(x, y; \bar{u}; \bar{p}, \bar{q}), \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots),$$

(2.1) where

$$\bar{u} = u \text{ if } -a \leq u \leq a, \quad \bar{p} = p \text{ if } -b_1 \leq p \leq b_1, \quad \bar{q} = q \text{ if } -b_2 \leq q \leq b_2.$$

$$\bar{u} = a \text{ if } a < u, \quad \bar{p} = b_1 \text{ if } b_1 < p, \quad \bar{q} = b_2 \text{ if } b_2 < q$$

$$\bar{u} = -a \text{ if } u < -a, \quad \bar{p} = -b_1 \text{ if } p < -b_1, \quad \bar{q} = -b_2 \text{ if } q < -b_2$$

From this extended definition we see that  $|f| \leq M$  in  $B'$ . Since  $\{g_\lambda\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} f$  in  $B'$ , there exists a constant  $L > 0$  such that  $|g_\lambda| \leq L$  in  $B'$  and for all  $\lambda$ . The functions  $g_\lambda$ ,  $(\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$  are uniformly continuous in  $B'$ , moreover they possess bounded difference quotients with respect to the arguments  $u$ ,  $p$  and  $q$  everywhere in  $B'$ . Hence in  $B'$ , for each function  $g_\lambda$  there exists a constant  $\delta_\lambda > 0$  such that

[illegible]

$$(2.2) \quad |g_\lambda(x, y; u_1; p_1, q_1) - g_\lambda(x, y; u_2; p_2, q_2)| \leq K_\lambda \{ |u_1 - u_2| + |p_1 - p_2| + |q_1 - q_2| \}.$$

Thus, by Theorem 1, to each  $g_\lambda$  there corresponds one and only one function  $u_\lambda(x, y) \in C'(R)$ ,  $u_{\lambda, xy}(x, y) \in C(R)$  satisfying

$$(2.3) \quad \begin{cases} u_{\lambda, xy} = g_\lambda(x, y; u_\lambda(x, y); u_{\lambda, x}(x, y), u_{\lambda, y}(x, y)), \\ u_\lambda(x, 0) = 0, \quad u_\lambda(0, y) = 0 \quad \text{for each } (x, y) \in R. \end{cases}$$

We may express the characteristic initial value problem for each  $u_\lambda$  in the form of an equivalent integral equation

$$(2.4) \quad u_\lambda(x, y) = \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y g_\lambda(\xi, \eta; u_\lambda(\xi, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(\xi, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, \eta)) d\eta.$$

By differentiation,

$$(2.5) \quad u_{\lambda, x}(x, y) = \int_0^y g_\lambda(x, \eta; u_\lambda(x, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x, \eta)) d\eta$$

$$(2.6) \quad u_{\lambda, y}(x, y) = \int_0^x g_\lambda(\xi, y; u_\lambda(\xi, y); u_{\lambda, x}(\xi, y), u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, y)) d\xi.$$

We now show that the sequences  $\{u_\lambda\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda, x}\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda, y}\}$  are each uniformly bounded and equicontinuous on  $R$ . For the sequence  $\{u_\lambda\}$  this follows directly from the integral expression

$$(2.4), \quad \text{for, given } x, x_1, x_2 \in [0, \ell_1] \quad \text{and } y, y_1, y_2 \in [0, \ell_2].$$

$$(2.7) \quad |u_\lambda(x, y)| \leq L \ell_1 \ell_2, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$$

$$(2.8) \quad |u_\lambda(x_1, y_1) - u_\lambda(x_2, y_2)| = L |x_1 - x_2| |y_1 - y_2| + L \ell_2 |x_1 - x_2| + L \ell_1 |y_1 - y_2|, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$$

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO  
DEPARTMENT OF CHEMISTRY

REPORT OF THE  
COMMISSIONERS OF THE BOARD OF REGENTS

FOR THE YEAR 1897-98

CHICAGO, ILL., 1898

PRINTED BY THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

1898

CHICAGO, ILL., 1898



The uniform boundedness of  $\{u_{\lambda,x}\}$  and of  $\{u_{\lambda,y}\}$  follow directly from (2.5) and (2.6), respectively, for, given  $(x,y) \in R$ ,

$$(2.9) \quad |u_{\lambda,x}(x,y)| \leq L f_2, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$$

$$(2.10) \quad |u_{\lambda,y}(x,y)| \leq L f_1, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots).$$

We base the proof of the equicontinuity of the functions of the sequence  $\{u_{\lambda,x}\}$  upon the following two lemmas, the first of which is due to T. H. GRONWALL [5].

Lemma 1. 1)  $z(y) \in C([0, l])$

$$(2.11) \quad 2) \quad 0 \leq z(y) \leq \int_0^y (Mz(\eta) + A) d\eta + B \quad \text{for } y \in [0, l]$$

where  $M$ ,  $A$  and  $B$  are constants  $\geq 0$ .

$$(2.12) \quad 3) \quad 0 \leq z(y) \leq (Al + B) e^{My} \quad \text{for } y \in [0, l].$$

Lemma 2. Given  $\mu > 0$ ,  $\zeta > 0$ , there exist  $\delta$ , a positive constant depending upon  $\mu$  alone, and  $N$ , a positive integer depending upon  $\zeta$  alone, such that whenever  $(x_1, y) \in R$ ,  $(x_2, y) \in R$ ,  $|x_1 - x_2| < \delta$  and  $\lambda > N$ ,

$$(2.13) \quad |u_{\lambda,x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda,x}(x_1, y)| \leq K \int_0^y |u_{\lambda,x}(x_2, \eta) - u_{\lambda,x}(x_1, \eta)| d\eta + \mu + \zeta$$

where  $K$  is the partial Lipschitz constant for  $f(x, y; u; p, q)$ .

Assume, for the moment, the validity of these two lemmas. Each of the functions  $u_{\lambda,x}$  is certainly uniformly continuous on  $R$ ; hence, if we let  $z(y) = |u_{\lambda,x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda,x}(x_1, y)|$  for any particular  $\lambda > N$ ,

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

DEPARTMENT OF MATHEMATICS

RESEARCH REPORT

NO. 100

1960

BY

JOHN H. L. LEE

AND

JOHN H. L. LEE

AND

JOHN H. L. LEE

AND

JOHN H. L. LEE

AND

JOHN H. L. LEE

AND

JOHN H. L. LEE

AND

JOHN H. L. LEE

AND

JOHN H. L. LEE

we have immediately that for  $|x_2 - x_1| < \delta$ ,

$$(2.14) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y)| \leq (\mu + \zeta) e^{K/2}.$$

Suppose  $(x_1, y) \in R$ ,  $(x_2, y_2) \in R$ , then certainly  $(x_2, y_1) \in R$  and

$$(2.15) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y_1)| \leq |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_1)| \\ + |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_1) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y_1)|, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots).$$

By (2.5) we have that

$$(2.16) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_1)| \leq L |y_2 - y_1|, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots).$$

Inequalities (2.14), (2.15) and (2.16) yield immediately the equicontinuity on  $R$  of the functions of the sequence  $\{u_{\lambda, x}\}$ ; for, given  $\epsilon > 0$ , we first choose  $\mu > 0$  and  $\zeta > 0$  such that

$$(2.17) \quad \mu + \zeta < \frac{\epsilon}{2e^{K/2}}$$

and let  $\delta$  and  $K$  be the corresponding constants given by Lemma 2. By the uniform continuity on  $R$  of each of the functions  $u_{\lambda, x}$ , there exists a positive constant  $\delta_0$ , depending on  $\epsilon$  alone, such that

$$|x_1 - x_2| < \delta_0 \text{ and } |y_1 - y_2| < \delta_0 \Rightarrow$$

$$(2.18) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y_1)| < \epsilon, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots, K).$$

Setting  $\delta_0 = \min(\delta, \delta_0, \frac{\epsilon}{2L})$  we obtain



$$|x_1 - x_2| < \delta_0 \quad \text{and} \quad |y_1 - y_2| < \delta_0 \Rightarrow$$

$$(2.19) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y_1)| < \epsilon, \quad \text{for } \lambda = 1, 2, \dots, N, N+1, \dots$$

Proof of Lemma 1: Let  $Z(y) = e^{My} \cdot w(y)$ , without loss, for we may always choose  $w(y) = e^{-My} \cdot Z(y)$ .  $w(y) \in C([0, \ell])$  and hence attains a maximum thereon. Let  $w_{\max}$  occur at  $y = y_1$ , then

$$\begin{aligned} 0 &\leq e^{My_1} w_{\max} \leq \int_0^{y_1} (M e^{M\eta} w(\eta) + A) d\eta + B \\ &\leq w_{\max} \int_0^{y_1} M e^{M\eta} d\eta + A y_1 + B \\ &= w_{\max} (e^{My_1} - 1) + A y_1 + B \end{aligned}$$

Thus  $0 \leq w_{\max} \leq A y_1 + B \leq A\ell + B$  and hence

$$0 \leq Z(y) \leq (A\ell + B) e^{M\ell} \quad \text{for } y \in [0, \ell].$$

Proof of Lemma 2:

$$\begin{aligned} u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y) &= \int_0^y [g_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta; u_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta); \\ &\quad u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) \\ &\quad - g_{\lambda}(x_1, \eta; u_{\lambda}(x_1, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), \\ &\quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta))] d\eta \\ (2.20) \quad &= \int_0^y [g_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta; u_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta), \\ &\quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) \\ &\quad - f(x_2, \eta; u_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta), \\ &\quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta))] d\eta \\ &\quad + \int_0^y [f(x_2, \eta; u_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta), \\ &\quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) \end{aligned}$$



(2.20)  
(Continued)

$$\begin{aligned}
 & - f(x_2, \eta; u_\lambda(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), \\
 & \quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) ] d\eta \\
 & + \int_0^y [ f(x_2, \eta; u_\lambda(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), \\
 & \quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) \\
 & - f(x_1, \eta; u_\lambda(x_1, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), \\
 & \quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta)) ] d\eta \\
 & + \int_0^y [ f(x_1, \eta; u_\lambda(x_1, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), \\
 & \quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta)) \\
 & - \varepsilon_\lambda(x_1, \eta; u_\lambda(x_1, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), \\
 & \quad u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta)) ] d\eta \\
 & \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots).
 \end{aligned}$$

Since  $\{\varepsilon_\lambda\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} f$  on  $E'$ , given  $\zeta > 0$ , there exists a positive integer  $N$ , depending upon  $\zeta$  alone, such that for  $\lambda > N$ ,

$$\begin{aligned}
 (2.21) \quad & \left| \int_0^y [ \varepsilon_\lambda(x_2, \eta; u_\lambda(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) - \right. \\
 & \quad \left. f(x_2, \eta; u_\lambda(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) ] d\eta \right| \\
 & + \left| \int_0^y [ f(x_1, \eta; u_\lambda(x_1, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta)) - \right. \\
 & \quad \left. \varepsilon_\lambda(x_1, \eta; u_\lambda(x_1, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta)) ] d\eta \right| < \zeta
 \end{aligned}$$

By hypothesis 2)',

$$(2.22) \quad \left| \int_0^y [ f(x_2, \eta; u_\lambda(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) - \right.$$

(CS.C)  
(continued)

1. The first part of the paper is devoted to a study of the properties of the function  $f(x)$  defined by the equation

$$f(x) = \int_0^x \frac{1}{1+t^2} dt$$

It is shown that the function  $f(x)$  is continuous and differentiable on the interval  $(-\infty, \infty)$  and that its derivative is given by the formula

$$f'(x) = \frac{1}{1+x^2}$$

It is also shown that the function  $f(x)$  is bounded on the interval  $(-\infty, \infty)$  and that its range is the interval  $(0, \pi/2)$ . The function  $f(x)$  is also shown to be concave down on the interval  $(-\infty, \infty)$ .

The second part of the paper is devoted to a study of the properties of the function  $g(x)$  defined by the equation

$$g(x) = \int_0^x \frac{t}{1+t^2} dt$$

It is shown that the function  $g(x)$  is continuous and differentiable on the interval  $(-\infty, \infty)$  and that its derivative is given by the formula

$$g'(x) = \frac{x}{1+x^2}$$

It is also shown that the function  $g(x)$  is bounded on the interval  $(-\infty, \infty)$  and that its range is the interval  $(-\pi/4, \pi/4)$ . The function  $g(x)$  is also shown to be concave up on the interval  $(-\infty, \infty)$ .



(2.22)

$$\begin{aligned} & \text{(Continued)} -f(x_2, \eta; u_\lambda(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta))] d\eta| \\ & \leq K \int_0^y |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta)| d\eta, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots) \end{aligned}$$

Since  $f$  is uniformly continuous on  $E'$ , the functions of the sequence  $\{u_\lambda\}$  are equicontinuous on  $R$ , and  $|u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta) - u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta)| \leq L |x_2 - x_1|$ ,  $(\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$ , it follows that given  $\mu > 0$  there exists a positive constant  $\delta$ , depending upon  $\mu$  alone, such that for  $|x_2 - x_1| < \delta$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} (2.23) \quad & \left| \int_0^y [f(x_2, \eta; u_\lambda(x_2, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, \eta)) \right. \\ & \left. - f(x_1, \eta; u_\lambda(x_1, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, \eta))] d\eta \right| < \mu, \\ & (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots). \end{aligned}$$

Therefore, from (2.21), (2.22) and (2.23), by virtue of (2.20) we obtain that for  $\lambda > N$  and  $|x_2 - x_1| < \delta$ ,

$$(2.13) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y)| < K \int_0^y |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta)| d\eta + \mu + \zeta$$

thus verifying Lemma 2.

The proof of the equicontinuity of the functions of the sequence  $\{u_{\lambda, y}\}$  follows precisely the same steps as that for the sequence  $\{u_{\lambda, x}\}$ .

We now invoke the well-known theorem of C. ARZELA [3] p. 1144:

"Given a set  $F$  of functions  $f$  defined and continuous on the closed bounded set  $A$ , then the necessary and sufficient conditions that each sequence of functions contained in  $F$  possesses

1. The first part of the paper is devoted to the study of the properties of the function  $f(x)$  defined by the equation

$$f(x) = \int_0^x \frac{1}{1+t^2} dt$$

It is well known that the function  $f(x)$  is increasing and concave down on the interval  $(-\infty, \infty)$ . Moreover, the function  $f(x)$  is bounded on the interval  $(-\infty, \infty)$  and its range is the interval  $(0, \frac{\pi}{2})$ . The function  $f(x)$  is also continuous and differentiable on the interval  $(-\infty, \infty)$ . The derivative of the function  $f(x)$  is given by the equation

$$f'(x) = \frac{1}{1+x^2}$$

It is easy to see that the function  $f(x)$  is a solution of the differential equation

$$f'(x) = \frac{1}{1+x^2}$$

with the initial condition  $f(0) = 0$ . The function  $f(x)$  is also a solution of the differential equation

$$f''(x) = -\frac{2x}{(1+x^2)^2}$$

which is obtained by differentiating the equation

a subsequence uniformly convergent on  $A$  are that  $P$  be uniformly bounded and equicontinuous."

By Theorem 1, there exists a unique triple  $(u_\lambda; u_{\lambda,x}; u_{\lambda,y})$  corresponding to  $g_\lambda$  for each  $\lambda$ . Since any subsequence of a uniformly convergent sequence is likewise uniformly convergent; and, since any subsequence of a uniformly bounded and equicontinuous sequence is likewise uniformly bounded and equicontinuous; there exists a subsequence  $\{g_\lambda^*\}$  of the sequence  $\{g_\lambda\}$  such that the corresponding sequences

$$(2.24) \quad \{u_\lambda^*\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u, \quad \{u_{\lambda,x}^*\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} v, \quad \{u_{\lambda,y}^*\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} w,$$

where  $u, v, w \in C(R)$ . This results from the following successive extractions of subsequences:

$\{u_\lambda\}$  is equicontinuous and uniformly bounded on  $R$ , hence there exists a subsequence  $\{u_\lambda^1\}$  of  $\{u_\lambda\}$  uniformly convergent on  $R$ .  $\{u_{\lambda,x}^1\}$  is equicontinuous and uniformly bounded on  $R$ , hence there exists a subsequence  $\{u_{\lambda,x}^2\}$  of  $\{u_{\lambda,x}^1\}$  uniformly convergent on  $R$ .  $\{u_{\lambda,y}^2\}$  is equicontinuous and uniformly bounded on  $R$ , hence there exists a subsequence  $\{u_{\lambda,y}^*\}$  of  $\{u_{\lambda,y}^2\}$  uniformly convergent on  $R$ . But, by the one-to-one correspondence mentioned above,  $\{u_{\lambda,x}^*\}$  is a subsequence of  $\{u_{\lambda,x}^2\}$  while  $\{u_\lambda^*\}$  is a subsequence of  $\{u_\lambda^1\}$ . Thus  $\{u_{\lambda,x}^*\}$  and  $\{u_\lambda^*\}$  are each uniformly convergent on  $R$ .

Writing, with the notation  $u_0^* = u_{0,x}^* = u_{0,y}^* = 0$ ,

... the ... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

$$(2.25) \quad u_{\lambda}^* = \sum_{k=1}^{\lambda} (u_k^* - u_{k-1}^*), \quad u_{\lambda,x}^* = \sum_{k=1}^{\lambda} (u_{k,x}^* - u_{k-1,x}^*),$$

$$u_{\lambda,y}^* = \sum_{k=1}^{\lambda} (u_{k,y}^* - u_{k-1,y}^*), \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots),$$

we see that the conditions for differentiation under the summation sign for infinite series are satisfied by (2.24) and the fact that  $u_{\lambda}^* \in C^1(R)$ ,  $(\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$ . Hence

$$(2.26) \quad v(x, y) = u_x(x, y), \quad w(x, y) = u_y(x, y) \quad \text{for } (x, y) \in R$$

We show that the function  $u$  so determined satisfies the integral equation equivalent to the original characteristic initial value problem, i.e.

$$(2.27) \quad u(x, y) = \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u(\xi, \eta); u_x(\xi, \eta), u_y(\xi, \eta)) d\eta$$

for  $(x, y) \in R$ .

For any  $\lambda$ , by (2.4),

$$(2.28) \quad \begin{aligned} & |u(x, y) - \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u(\xi, \eta); u_x(\xi, \eta), u_y(\xi, \eta)) d\eta| \\ & \leq |u(x, y) - u_{\lambda}^*(x, y)| + \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u(\xi, \eta); u_x(\xi, \eta), \\ & \quad u_y(\xi, \eta)) - f(\xi, \eta; u_{\lambda}^*(\xi, \eta); u_{\lambda,x}^*(\xi, \eta), u_{\lambda,y}^*(\xi, \eta))| d\eta \\ & \quad + \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u_{\lambda}^*(\xi, \eta); u_{\lambda,x}^*(\xi, \eta), u_{\lambda,y}^*(\xi, \eta)) \\ & \quad - f(\xi, \eta; u_{\lambda}^*(\xi, \eta); u_{\lambda,x}^*(\xi, \eta), u_{\lambda,y}^*(\xi, \eta))| d\eta \end{aligned}$$

Since  $\{u_{\lambda}^*\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u$  on  $D'$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda}^*\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u$  on  $R$ , given  $\epsilon > 0$  and  $(x, y) \in I$ , there exists a positive integer  $N_1$ , depending upon  $\epsilon$  alone, such that for  $\lambda > N_1$ ,

$$\frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} \right) = \frac{1}{2} \quad (35.4)$$

$$\frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} \right) = \frac{1}{2}$$

... ..

$$\frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} \right) = \frac{1}{2} \quad (35.5)$$

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

...

...

...

...

...

...

$$(2.29) \quad |u(x,y) - u_{\lambda}^*(x,y)| < \epsilon,$$

$$(2.30) \quad \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u_{\lambda}^*(\xi, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}^*(\xi, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}^*(\xi, \eta)) \\ - g_{\lambda}^*(\xi, \eta; u_{\lambda}^*(\xi, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}^*(\xi, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}^*(\xi, \eta))| d\eta \\ < \epsilon \ell_1 \ell_2.$$

Moreover, since  $f$  is uniformly continuous in  $B'$  while  $\{u_{\lambda}^*\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda, x}^*\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda, y}^*\}$  converge uniformly on  $R$  to  $u$ ,  $u_x$ ,  $u_y$  respectively, there exists a positive integer  $N_2$ , depending on  $\epsilon$  alone, such that for  $\lambda > N_2$ ,

$$(2.31) \quad \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u(\xi, \eta); u_x(\xi, \eta), u_y(\xi, \eta)) \\ - f(\xi, \eta; u_{\lambda}^*(\xi, \eta); u_{\lambda, x}^*(\xi, \eta), u_{\lambda, y}^*(\xi, \eta))| d\eta \\ < \epsilon \ell_1 \ell_2.$$

Introducing (2.29), (2.30) and (2.31) into (2.28), we obtain that for  $\lambda > \max(N_1, N_2)$

$$(2.32) \quad |u(x,y) - \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u(\xi, \eta); u_x(\xi, \eta), u_y(\xi, \eta)) \\ < \epsilon(1 + 2\ell_1 \ell_2)$$

But  $\epsilon$  is arbitrary, hence (2.27) is verified for each  $(x,y) \in R$ .

We must verify the one additional fact that for each  $(x,y) \in R$ ,  $(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)) \in B$ , instead of just belonging to  $B'$ .





By differentiation from (2.27),

$$(2.33) \quad u_x(x,y) = \int_0^y f(x,\eta; u(x,\eta); u_x(x,\eta), u_y(x,\eta)) d\eta$$

$$(2.34) \quad u_y(x,y) = \int_0^x f(\xi,y; u(\xi,y); u_x(\xi,y), u_y(\xi,y)) d\xi.$$

Hence, from the extended definition of  $f$ , (2.1), and hypothesis 3),

$$(2.35) \quad |u(x,y)| \leq \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi,\eta; u(\xi,\eta); u_x(\xi,\eta), u_y(\xi,\eta))| d\eta \\ \leq M'_1 \leq a$$

$$(2.36) \quad |u_x(x,y)| \leq \int_0^y |f(x,\eta; u(x,\eta); u_x(x,\eta), u_y(x,\eta))| d\eta \\ \leq M'_2 \leq b_1$$

$$(2.37) \quad |u_y(x,y)| \leq \int_0^x |f(\xi,y; u(\xi,y); u_x(\xi,y), u_y(\xi,y))| d\xi \\ \leq M'_1 \leq b_2,$$

this completing the proof of Theorem 1a.

Remarks a) and b) to Theorem 1 apply as well to Theorem 1a.

By the following example we show that the integral surfaces for Theorem 1a are not necessarily unique:

Example 1 Consider the characteristic initial value problem:

$$(2.38) \quad u_{xy} = |u|^{\frac{1}{2}}; \quad u(x,0) = u(0,y) = 0.$$

Here  $f(x,y; u; u_x, u_y) = |u|^{\frac{1}{2}}$  is continuous for all  $u$  but fails to satisfy a Lipschitz condition on  $u$  at  $u = 0$ . Theorem 1a applies



to insure existence of a solution in a sufficiently small neighborhood of the origin. However, at least two solutions, valid for all  $(x,y)$  in the finite plane, are directly available. First,  $u \equiv 0$  obviously satisfies. Second, if we seek a solution  $u$  satisfying

- i)  $u \geq 0$ ,
- ii) there exist functions  $X, Y$  such that  

$$u(x,y) = X(x) \cdot Y(y);$$

that is, by the method of separation of variables, we obtain immediately the solution  $u(x,y) = \frac{1}{16} x^2 y^2$ .

For purposes of illustrating the various situations that might occur, we give the following:

Example 2. Consider the characteristic initial value problem:

$$(2.39) \quad u_{xy} = |u_x|^{\frac{1}{2}}; \quad u(x,0) = u(0,y) = 0.$$

Here  $f(x,y; u; p,q) = |p|^{\frac{1}{2}}$  is continuous for all  $p$  but fails to satisfy a Lipschitz condition on  $p$  at  $p = 0$ . Since  $p(x,0) = u_x(x,0) = 0$  neither Theorem 1 nor Theorem 1a will insure existence of a solution over any domain including a portion of the  $x$  axis. Such solutions do exist, however. One is  $u \equiv 0$ . Under the assumption  $p = u_x \geq 0$  we obtain another, for now

$$p_{xy} = p^{\frac{1}{2}} \quad \text{or}$$

$$\frac{dp}{p^{\frac{3}{2}}} = 2p^{\frac{1}{2}} = y + c_1.$$

Since  $p(x,0) = 0$ ,  $c_1 = 0$  and



$$p = u_x = \frac{y^2}{4} \quad \text{or, integrating,}$$

$$u = \frac{xy^2}{4} + c_2.$$

Since  $u(0,y) = 0$ ,  $c_2 = 0$ ; and hence

$$u = \frac{xy^2}{4}$$

is a second solution valid throughout the finite plane.

In Example 2 consider the function

$$u_0(x,y) = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{for } x \leq 0 \\ \frac{xy^2}{4} & \text{for } x \geq 0. \end{cases}$$

$u_0$  is continuous for all  $(x,y)$  and satisfies the initial value problem (2.39) everywhere except along the  $y$  axis, where for  $y \neq 0$ ,  $u_{0x}(0,y)$  does not exist. Roughly speaking,  $u_0$  is a continuous integral surface of problem (2.39) having a jump in the normal first derivative across a characteristic.

For equations meeting the continuity, boundedness and partial Lipschitz requirements of Theorem 1a we cannot match integral surfaces in the above fashion to obtain first derivative jumps across characteristics. This follows from the fact that if we prescribe  $u(a,y) = V(y) \in C'([0, \ell_2])$  along the characteristic  $x=a$ ,  $a \in [0, \ell_1]$ , then

$$(2.40) \quad \begin{cases} p_y(a,y) = f(a,y; V(y); p(a,y), V'(y)) \\ p(a,0) = 0 \end{cases}$$

represents a first order ordinary differential equation for the



unknown function  $p = u_x$  under a one point boundary condition. The conditions that  $f$  be continuous, bounded and partially Lipschitzian are sufficient to insure the existence of a unique determination of  $u_x(a, y)$  for  $y \in [0, l_2]$ . Note that in Example 2 the function  $f$  was continuous only and hence the determination of  $u_x$  from the above ordinary differential equation was not unique, thus admitting the possibility of a jump in  $u_x$ . The conditions for the determination of  $u_y$  along a characteristic  $y = \text{const.}$  are similar.

The above remarks serve to permit the extension of the domain of existence of the integral surfaces of Theorems 1 and 1a from  $R$  to  $R^*$ :  $\begin{cases} -l_1 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ -l_2 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$ . The arguments for the existence may be made applicable to other quadrants than the first by mere coordinate reflections. Moreover the integrals obtained in the separate quadrants must have first order contacts with each other along the coordinate axes by the above reasoning from ordinary differential equation theory. Hence we may obtain existence and uniqueness over the domain  $R^*$  by replacing  $B$  by  $B^*$ :  $\begin{cases} -l_1 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ -l_2 \leq y \leq l_2 \\ -a \leq u \leq a \\ -b_1 \leq p \leq b_1 \\ -b_2 \leq q \leq b_2 \end{cases}$  in Theorem 1; and we obtain simply existence over  $R^*$  by replacing  $u$  by  $u^*$  in Theorem 1a.

In the classical existence theorem for the ordinary differential equation  $\frac{dy}{dx} = f(x, y)$ , with  $y(0) = 0$ , the conditions that  $f$





be continuous on  $C: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq a \\ -b \leq y \leq b \end{cases}$ , with  $M = \max_{C} |f|$  on  $C$ , were shown to be sufficient to insure existence of at least one integral curve  $y = y(x)$  for  $x \in [0, \alpha]$  with  $\alpha \leq \min(a, \frac{b}{M})$ . This bound,  $\alpha \leq \min(a, \frac{b}{M})$ , was shown by A. WINTNER [15] to be a maximal bound in a certain sense. We apply his method to Theorem 1a in the proof of the following:

Theorem 2.

If, in Theorem 1a, we replace  $B$  by  $B''$ :

$$B'' = \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \ell'_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq \ell'_2 \\ -\infty < u < \infty \\ -b_1 \leq p \leq b_1 \\ -b_2 \leq q \leq b_2 \end{cases}$$

and require that  $f$  be bounded thereon, then hypothesis 3) in that theorem reduces to

$$3)' \quad \ell'_1 \leq \min(\ell'_1, \frac{b_2}{M}), \quad \ell'_2 \leq \min(\ell'_2, \frac{b_1}{M}),$$

where  $M = \max_C |f|$  on  $B''$ . Moreover, the bounds established by 3) are maximal bounds in a sense to be explained below.

Proof.

The condition  $M \ell'_1 \ell'_2 \leq a$  of hypothesis 3) is immediately satisfied since  $a$  approaches  $+\infty$ . The conditions  $M \ell'_1 \leq b_2$ ,  $M \ell'_2 \leq b_1$  may be rewritten as in 3) and are now the only restrictions on  $\ell'_1$  and  $\ell'_2$ .



If  $\ell'_2 \leq \frac{b_2}{M}$ , ( $\ell'_2 \leq \frac{b_1}{M}$ ), then the conclusion is immediate.

For, we may take  $f(x, y; u; p, q) = h(x), (g(y))$ , which function is not even defined for  $x > \ell_1 = \ell'_1$ , ( $y > \ell_2 = \ell'_2$ ).

Suppose  $\ell'_2 > \frac{b_1}{M}$ . Then we consider the sequence of problems:

$$(2.41) \quad u_{xy} = (2^{1/m} - u_x)^{1/m+1}, \quad u(x, 0) = u(0, y) = 0, \quad (m=1, 2, \dots).$$

Setting  $p = u_x$ , (2.41) becomes

$$p_y(x, y) = (2^{1/m} - p(x, y))^{1/m+1}, \quad p(x, 0) = 0.$$

Integrating this ordinary differential equation for  $p$  as a function of  $y$ , we obtain

$$p(x, y) = 2^{1/m} - \left[ 2^{1/m+1} - \frac{m}{m+1} y \right]^{m+1/m}.$$

But, since  $p = u_x$  and  $u(0, y) = 0$  we may integrate again to obtain

$$(2.42) \quad u(x, y) = x \left\{ 2^{1/m} - \left[ \frac{m}{m+1} (C_m - y) \right]^{m+1/m} \right\}$$

where

$$(2.43) \quad C_m = \frac{m+1}{m} 2^{\frac{1}{m+1}}.$$

The line  $y = C_m$  is a branch line of the solution  $u$ . Under the supposition  $\ell'_2 > \frac{b_1}{M}$ , the desired statement is that  $\frac{b_1}{M}$  is a maximal bound on  $\ell'_2$ , i.e., for each  $\epsilon > 0$ , there exists a function  $f(x, y; u; p, q)$ , depending on  $\epsilon$  and satisfying hypotheses 1), 2)' and 3)' on  $\Gamma$ , such that an integral  $u(x, y)$  of the problem corresponding to  $f$  has a singularity for some  $y \in (\frac{b_1}{M}, \frac{b_1}{M} + \epsilon)$ .



Defining

$$f_m(x, y; u; p, q) = (2^{1/m} - p)^{1/m+1} \text{ for } -2^{1/m+1} \leq p \leq 2^{1/m+1},$$

( $m = 1, 2, \dots$ ), we obtain

$$b_{1m} = 2^{1/m+1}, \quad M_m = (2^{1/m} + 2^{1/m+1})^{1/m+1}; \text{ and, since}$$

$$(2^{1/m} + 2^{1/m+1}) > 2, \quad (m = 1, 2, \dots),$$

$$\lim_{m \rightarrow \infty} \frac{b_{1m}}{M_m} = 1.$$

Moreover, by (2.43),

$$\lim_{m \rightarrow \infty} C_m = 1.$$

Hence, given  $\epsilon > 0$ , there exists a positive integer  $M$ , depending on  $\epsilon$  alone, such that  $m > M \Rightarrow$

$$\frac{b_{1m}}{M_m} + \epsilon > C_m > \frac{b_{1m}}{M_m}.$$

Consequently  $\frac{b_{1m}}{M_m}$  is a maximal bound on  $\lambda_2$ .

To determine that the condition  $\lambda_1 \leq \min(\lambda_1', \frac{b_2}{M})$  is also a maximal bound we consider the sequence of problems.

$$(2.44) \quad u_{xy} = (2^{1/m} - u_y)^{1/m+1}, \quad u(x, 0) = u(0, y), \quad (m = 1, 2, \dots),$$

and follow the same line of reasoning as before. Thus Theorem 2 is verified.

The close parallelism between our conclusions and the classical theorems for first order ordinary differential equations



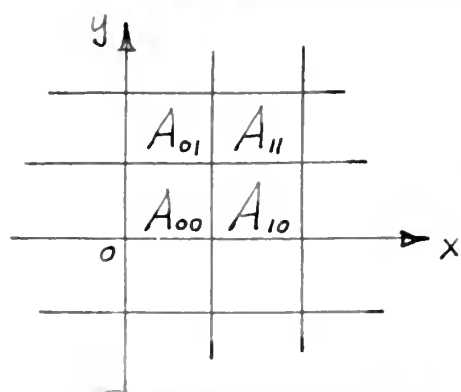
(See E. KAMKE [2] ) leads one to suspect that an existence theorem might be proved wherein mere continuity of the function  $f$  was demanded. The analogue to the Cauchy polygon method is the attack suggested by the parallelism, and it leads to an existence theorem for the characteristic initial value problem:

$$(2.45) \quad u_{xy} = f(x, y; u) \quad , \quad u(x, 0) = u(0, y) = 0.$$

We do not give the proof here; first, because the theorem is a special case of Theorem 1a; and, second, because the steps in the proof are practically identical with those of the Cauchy polygon method for ordinary differential equations.

When  $f = f(x, y; u; p, q)$  and  $f$  is merely continuous this attack involves difficulties which we have not been able to resolve. We sketch the method to indicate the source of trouble:

In a neighborhood of the origin a partition  $\Pi$  by



characteristics is specified where the subregions  $A_{ij}$  in the first quadrant are defined as

$$A_{ij} : \begin{cases} x_i \leq x < x_{i+1} \\ y_j \leq y < y_{j+1} \end{cases} \quad (i, j = 0, 1, 2, \dots)$$

We formulate the approximate integral surface  $u$  corresponding to the partition  $\Pi$  as follows:

$$(2.46) \quad u_{\Pi}(x, y) = \int_0^x \int_0^y f_{\Pi}(\xi, \eta) d\eta d\xi$$

where





$$(2.47) \quad F_{\pi}(x,y) = f(x_1, y_1; u_{\pi}(x_1, y_1); u_{\pi_x}(x_1, y_1), \\ u_{\pi_y}(x_1, y_1)) \\ \text{for } (x,y) \in A_{1j}.$$

The principal difficulty lies in the fact that the derivatives

$$(2.48) \quad u_{\pi_x} = \int_0^y F_{\pi}(x, \eta) d\eta \quad \text{and}$$

$$(2.49) \quad u_{\pi_y} = \int_0^x F_{\pi}(\xi, y) d\xi$$

are discontinuous across the partition lines  $x = \text{constant}$  and  $y = \text{constant}$ , respectively, thus preventing the direct application of ARKELA's theorem on equicontinuous functions when we consider the sequence of approximate integral surfaces formed by partition refinement.

The equation of (2.45) appears to be more amenable than the more general equation involving the first derivatives  $p$  and  $q$ . G. FUBINI [16] p. 622, by demanding only that  $F(x,y;u)$  be continuous and Lipschitzian with respect to  $u$ , has proved the existence of a unique integral of  $u_{xy} = F(x,y;u)$  satisfying Dirichlet conditions, i.e. the value of  $u$  prescribed on a closed contour. This result, while remarkable, is not contradictory since  $u$  is shown to have a discontinuity of the second type at one point of the boundary.

We conclude this chapter with the statement of the extension of Theorems 1 and 1a to a system of equations



(2.50)  $u_i = f_i(x, y; u_1, \dots, u_n; p_1, \dots, p_n, q_1, \dots, q_n), (i=1, 2, \dots, n)$   
satisfying the initial conditions

$$(2.51) \quad u_i(x, 0) = u_i(0, y) = 0, \quad (i=1, 2, \dots, n).$$

Theorem 3, below, is a natural extension of Theorem 1. In principle, it was first obtained by O. NICCOLITTI [14] p.7. His statement, however, is not explicit about the bounds on the domain of existence. Moreover, to prove uniqueness he requires the  $f_i$  to be of class  $C^1$ . We obtain the improved statement, Theorem 3, by modifying the arguments of E. KAMKE [2] p. 402 and p. 403 to apply them to the system (2.50).

Theorem 3)

$$1) \quad f_i(x, y; u_j; p_j, q_j)^2 \in C(B^n), \quad B^n: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \\ -a \leq u_1 \leq a \\ -b_1 \leq p_1 \leq b_1 \\ -b_2 \leq q_1 \leq b_2 \end{cases}$$

2) The  $f_i$  are Lipschitzian on  $B^n$ ; i.e. there exists a positive constant  $K$  such that for  $(x, y; u^1_j; p^1_j, q^1_j) \in B^n$ ,

$(x, y; u^2_j; p^2_j, q^2_j) \in B^n$ , and  $i = 1, 2, \dots, n$ ,

$$|f_i(x, y; u^1_j; p^1_j, q^1_j) - f_i(x, y; u^2_j; p^2_j, q^2_j)| \leq K \sum_{j=1}^n \left\{ |u^1_j - u^2_j| + |p^1_j - p^2_j| + |q^1_j - q^2_j| \right\}.$$

3)  $u \leq l_1, l_2 \leq a, u \leq l_1 \leq b_2, u \leq l_2 \leq b_1$  where

$$K = \max \left\{ |f_1|, \dots, |f_n| \right\} \text{ on } B^n.$$

<sup>2</sup> Notation:  $(x, y; u; p_j, q_j) = (x, y; u_1, \dots, u_n; p_1, \dots, p_n, q_1, \dots, q_n).$



$\Rightarrow$  4) There exists one and only one set of functions

$\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$ ,  $u_j(x, y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{j,xy}(x, y) \in C(R)$ , ( $j=1, \dots, n$ ),  
where  $R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$ , such that for each  $(x, y) \in R$  the point

$(x, y; u_j(x, y); u_{j,x}(x, y), u_{j,y}(x, y)) \in B''$ , and

$u_{1,xy}(x, y) = f_1(x, y; u_j(x, y); u_{j,x}(x, y), u_{j,y}(x, y))$ ,

$u_1(x, 0) = u_1(0, y) = 0$ , ( $i = 1, \dots, n$ ), for each  $(x, y) \in R$ .

By relaxing hypothesis 2) we obtain the improved theorem below; which stands in the same relation to Theorem 3 that Theorem 1a does to Theorem 1.

### Theorem 3a

1)

2)' The  $f_i$  are partially Lipschitzian on  $B''$ ; i.e. there exists a positive constant  $K$  such that for  $(x, y; u_j; p_j^1, q_j^1) \in B''$ ,  
 $(x, y; u_j; p_j^2, q_j^2) \in B''$ , and  $i = 1, 2, \dots, n$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} & |f_i(x, y; u_j; p_j^1, q_j^1) - f_i(x, y; u_j; p_j^2, q_j^2)| \\ & \leq K \sum_{j=1}^n \left\{ |p_j^1 - p_j^2| + |q_j^1 - q_j^2| \right\}. \end{aligned}$$

3)

$\Rightarrow$  4)' There exists at least one set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$ ,  
 $u_j(x, y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{j,xy}(x, y) \in C(R)$ , ( $j=1, \dots, n$ ), where



$R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$ , such that for each  $(x, y) \in R$  the point

$(x, y; u_j(x, y); u_{j,x}(x, y), u_{j,y}(x, y)) \in B''$ , and

$u_{i,xy}(x, y) = f_i(x, y; u_j(x, y); u_{j,x}(x, y), u_{j,y}(x, y))$ ,

$u_i(x, 0) = u_i(0, y) = 0$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$ , for each  $(x, y) \in R$ .

The proof of Theorem 3a is essentially a step by step repetition of that for Theorem 1a. WEIERSTRASS' theorem tells us that for each positive integer  $i$  there exists a sequence of polynomials  $\{g_{i\lambda}\}$   $(x, y; u_j; p_j, q_j)$ ,  $(\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$ , converging uniformly on  $B''$  to  $f_i(x, y; u_j; p_j, q_j)$ . We extend the  $g_{i\lambda}$  and the  $f_i$  as before and obtain that there exist positive constants  $L_i$  such that for each  $i$   $|g_{i\lambda}| \leq L_i$  on  $B''$ , extended, and for all  $\lambda$ . We let  $L = \max \{L_1, \dots, L_n\}$  and proceed as before, using Theorem 3 in place of Theorem 1 to obtain the integral  $u_{i\lambda}$  associated with each  $g_{i\lambda}$ .

We note only one point of significant difference in the arguments. In place of inequality (2.13) of Lemma 2 we now have the inequalities

$$\begin{aligned} & |u_{i\lambda, x}(x_2, y) - u_{i\lambda, x}(x_1, y)| \\ & \leq K \int_0^y \sum_{j=1}^n |u_{j\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta) - u_{j\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta)| d\eta \\ & \quad (i = 1, \dots, n). \end{aligned}$$

Summing these, and letting

$$Z(y) = \sum_{i=1}^n |u_{i\lambda, x}(x_2, y) - u_{i\lambda, x}(x_1, y)|,$$

we obtain





$$0 \leq z(y) \leq Kn \int_0^y z(\eta) d\eta + n(\mu + \zeta)$$

to which Lemma 1 applies. Thus the equicontinuity of each of the sequences  $\{u_{i\lambda, x}\}$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$  is assured.

Remarks a) and b) to Theorems 1 and 1a apply, with obvious modifications, to Theorems 3 and 3a. Moreover, as before, we may extend the domain of existence of the integral surfaces of Theorems 3 and 3a from  $R$  to  $R^*$ : 
$$\begin{cases} -l_1 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ -l_2 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}.$$

The set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$  representing the solution to the problem of Theorem 3a cannot be shown to be unique. This is made evident by extending Example 1 to the system

$$\begin{aligned} u_{1,xy} &= |u_1|^{\frac{1}{2}}, & u_1(x,0) &= u_1(0,y) = 0 \\ u_{2,xy} &= 0, & u_2(x,0) &= u_2(0,y) = 0 \\ &\vdots & &\vdots \\ u_{n,xy} &= 0, & u_n(x,0) &= u_n(0,y) = 0 \end{aligned}$$

for which  $u_i \equiv 0$   $(i = 2, \dots, n)$

while  $u_1 \equiv 0$  or  $u_1 = \frac{1}{16} x^2 y^2$ . Thus at least two sets of solutions are possible for this system which satisfies the hypotheses of Theorem 3a.

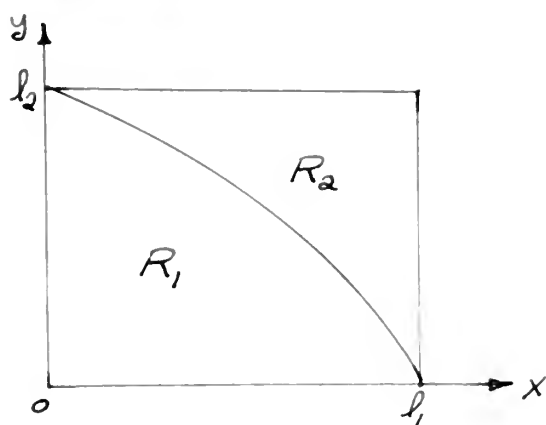


## CHAPTER III

The Cauchy Problem for  $u_{xy} = f(x, y; u; u_x, u_y)$ .

The development of this chapter closely parallels that of Chapter II. Consequently, the notation will be abridged, in particular with respect to the arguments of functions; and the proofs will be merely outlined to show minor variations from the statements in Chapter 2.

For reference, we state the following theorem proved first for systems of equations by O. NICCOLETTI [14] p. 7. Our statement may be easily inferred from that of E. KAMKE [2] p. 405 and p. 410, by a slight modification of his proof.

Theorem 4

$$1) f(x, y; u; p, q) \in C(B),$$

$$B: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \\ -a \leq u \leq a \\ -b_1 \leq p \leq b_1 \\ -b_2 \leq q \leq b_2 \end{cases}$$

2)  $f$  is Lipschitzian on  $B$ , (as defined in Theorem 1).

3)  $M l_1 l_2 = a$ ,  $M l_1 = b_2$ ,  $M l_2 = b_1$ , where  $M = \max |f|$  on  $B$

4)  $\gamma: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ y = \varphi(x) \end{cases}$  where  $\varphi(x) \in C^1([0, l_1])$ ,  $\varphi'(x) \neq 0$   
for  $x \in [0, l_1]$  and  $\varphi(0) = l_2$ ,  
 $\varphi(l_1) = 0$ .



$\Rightarrow$  5) There exists one and only one function  $u(x,y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{xy}(x,y) \in C(R)$ , where  $R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \ell_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq \ell_2 \end{cases}$ , such that for each  $(x,y) \in R$ , the point  $(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)) \in R$ , and

$$u_{xy}(x,y) = f(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)),$$

$$u(x, \varphi(x)) = u_x(x, \varphi(x)) = u_y(x, \varphi(x)) = 0$$

for each  $(x,y) \in R$ .

Remarks c) Suppose we prescribe  $u(x, \varphi(x)) = U(x)$ ,  $u_x(x, \varphi(x)) = P(x)$ ,  $u_y(x, \varphi(x)) = Q(x)$  where  $U(x) \in C^1([0, \ell_1])$  while  $P(x), Q(x) \in C([0, \ell_1])$ . Our prescription must satisfy the strip condition  $U' = P + Q \cdot \varphi'$  for each  $x \in [0, \ell_1]$ . Consider the function  $w(x,y) = U(x) + (y - \varphi(x)) Q(x)$ . Clearly,  $w_{xy} = Q'(x)$  while  $w(x, \varphi(x)) = U(x)$ ,  $w_x(x, \varphi(x)) = P(x)$ , and  $w_y(x, \varphi(x)) = Q(x)$ . Hence the function  $v = u - w$  must satisfy  $v_{xy} = Q'(x) + f(x,y; v + w; v_x + w_x, v_y + w_y)$ , with  $v(x, \varphi(x)) = v_x(x, \varphi(x)) = v_y(x, \varphi(x)) = 0$ , a problem of the type covered by Theorem 4.

d) Hypothesis 4) of Theorem 4 is more restrictive than it need be. At isolated points of  $\gamma$  we may have a horizontal or vertical tangent, provided that  $\gamma$  does not cross the same characteristic more than once. For, under these conditions the inverse function  $\psi$  to  $\varphi$  will exist and be continuous for all  $y \in [0, \ell_2]$ .

An improvement of this theorem is as follows:



Theorem 4a

1)

2)'  $f$  is partially Lipschitzian on  $B$ , (as defined in Theorem 1a).

3)

4)

$\Rightarrow$  5) There exists at least one function  $u(x,y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{xy}(x,y) \in C(R)$ , where  $R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$ , such that for each

$(x,y) \in R$ , the point  $(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)) \in B$ , and

$$u_{xy}(x,y) = f(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)),$$

$$u(x, \varphi(x)) = u_x(x, \varphi(x)) = u_y(x, \varphi(x)) = 0$$

for each  $(x,y) \in R$ .

Outline of proof.

The path  $\gamma$  may also be expressed as  $\gamma: \begin{cases} x = \psi(y) \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$  where

$\psi(y) \in C^1([0, l_2])$ ,  $\psi'(y) \neq 0$  for  $y \in [0, l_2]$ .  $\psi$  is the inverse function to  $\varphi$ .

We may express the problem as the integral equation

$$(3.1) \quad u(x,y) = \int_0^y \psi(\eta) d\eta \int_0^x \varphi(\xi) f(\xi, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\xi$$

hence

$$(3.2) \quad u_x(x,y) = \int_0^y \varphi(\eta) d\eta \int_0^x \psi(\xi) f(\xi, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\xi$$

$$(3.3) \quad u_y(x,y) = \int_0^x \varphi(\xi) d\xi f(\xi, y; u; u_x, u_y)$$

$$(3.4) \quad u_{xy}(x,y) = \int_0^x \psi(\xi) d\xi f(\xi, y; u; u_x, u_y) + \int_0^y \varphi(\eta) d\eta f(x, \eta; u; u_x, u_y)$$





By WEIERSTRASS' theorem, there exists a sequence of polynomials  $\{g_\lambda\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif.}} f$  on  $B$ . We extend the domain of definition of  $f$  and the polynomials  $g_\lambda$  over  $B$  to  $B'$  by definition (2.1).

We obtain again the constant  $L > 0$  such that  $|g_\lambda| \leq L$  in  $B'$  for all  $\lambda$ . Moreover, for each  $g_\lambda$  the Lipschitz condition (2.2) is satisfied. Thus, by Theorem 4, for each  $\lambda$  there exists a unique solution  $u_\lambda$  to the problem

$$(3.4) \quad \begin{cases} u_{\lambda,xy} = g_\lambda(x,y; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}), \\ u_\lambda(x, \varphi(x)) = u_{\lambda,x}(x, \varphi(x)) = u_{\lambda,y}(x, \varphi(x)) = 0. \end{cases}$$

That the sequences  $\{u_\lambda\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda,x}\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda,y}\}$  are uniformly bounded on  $R$ , and that the sequence  $\{u_\lambda\}$  is equicontinuous on  $R$  is immediately evident from the equivalent integral expressions

$$(3.5) \quad \begin{aligned} u_\lambda(x,y) &= \int_{\psi(y)}^x d\xi \int_{\varphi(\xi)}^y g_\lambda(\xi, \eta; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) d\eta \\ &= \int_{\varphi(x)}^y d\eta \int_{\psi(\eta)}^x g_\lambda(\xi, \eta; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) d\xi, \end{aligned}$$

$$(3.6) \quad u_{\lambda,x}(x,y) = \int_{\varphi(x)}^y g_\lambda(x, \eta; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) d\eta,$$

$$(3.7) \quad u_{\lambda,y}(x,y) = \int_{\psi(y)}^x g_\lambda(\xi, y; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) d\xi.$$

We now establish the equicontinuity of  $\{u_{\lambda,x}\}$  and of  $\{u_{\lambda,y}\}$ . This done, the same arguments as those for the proof of Theorem 1a will serve to obtain a subsequence  $\{u_{\lambda''}\}$  of  $\{u_\lambda\}$  which converges uniformly to the solution  $u$ .



There is no loss in generality in restricting ourselves at this point to the consideration of those points  $(x, y) \in R_2: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ \varphi(x) \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$ .

For we shall see that the arguments developed below will apply as well for  $(x, y) \in R_1: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq \varphi(x) \end{cases}$  after a simple coordinate

translation and rotation. Thus if we insure existence of a solution on  $R_2$ , existence on  $R_1$  is simultaneously verified. Moreover, the Cauchy initial data insure that such integral surfaces have a first order contact along  $\gamma$  and hence define an integral surface throughout all of  $R = R_1 + R_2$ .

Given points  $(x_2, y_2) \in R_2$ ,  $(x_1, y_1) \in R_2$ , it is always possible to label these points in such a way that  $(x_1, y_2) \in R_2$ . This being done, we have that

$$(3.8) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y_2) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y_1)| \leq L |y_2 - y_1|,$$

$$(3.9) \quad |u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, y_2)| \leq L |x_2 - x_1|.$$

Assuming, without loss, that  $y \geq \varphi(x_2) \geq \varphi(x_1)$ , we have that

$$(3.10) \quad u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y) = \int_{\varphi(x_1)}^y \left[ \varepsilon_{\lambda}(x_2, \eta; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) - \varepsilon_{\lambda}(x_1, \eta; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) \right] d\eta \\ + \int_{\varphi(x_1)}^{\varphi(x_2)} \varepsilon_{\lambda}(x_1, \eta; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\eta$$

We operate on the first integral on the right hand side of (3.10) in the manner demonstrated in equation (2.20). We obtain a formula identical with (2.20) except that here the lower limit of integration is  $y = \varphi(x_2)$  instead of  $y = 0$ . For brevity, we omit the formula.



Since

$$(3.11) \quad \left| \int_{\varphi(x_1)}^{\varphi(x_2)} g_{\lambda}(x_1, \eta; u_{\lambda}, u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\eta \right| \leq L |\varphi(x_2) - \varphi(x_1)|, \quad (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$$

and since  $\varphi(x)$  is uniformly continuous on  $[0, \ell_1]$ , by the same reasoning as before we arrive at the slight modification to Lemma 2,

$$(3.12) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y)| \leq K \int_{\varphi(x_2)}^y |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, \eta) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, \eta)| d\eta + \mu + \zeta$$

from which, by Lemma 1,

$$(3.13) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda, x}(x_1, y)| \leq (\mu + \zeta) e^{K(y - \varphi(x_2))} \leq (\mu + \zeta) e^{K\ell_2}.$$

The equicontinuity of  $\{u_{\lambda, x}\}$  is thus assured.

The argument for the equicontinuity of  $\{u_{\lambda, y}\}$  is similar, hence Theorem 4a obtains.

Remarks c) and d) to Theorem 4 apply as well to Theorem 4a. Quite obviously, if  $f$  is continuous, bounded and Lipschitzian (or partially Lipschitzian) on the infinite cylinder with cross section  $R$ , then hypothesis 3) of Theorem 4 (or 4a) is immediately satisfied. In fact, this was the form of Theorem 4 which was utilized in the proof of Theorem 4a.

As previously mentioned, the extension of Theorem 4 to systems of equations was first obtained, in principle, by C. NICCOLOTTI [14]. He was not, however, explicit about the domain of existence of the solution. The following statement may be derived



from the same arguments of E. KAMKE [2] p. 405 and p. 410 used as the basis for Theorem 4.

Theorem 5.

$$1) \quad f_i(x, y; u_1, \dots, u_n; p_1, \dots, p_n, q_1, \dots, q_n) \in C(B^n)$$

$$B^n: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \lambda_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq \lambda_2 \\ -a \leq u_i \leq a \\ -b_1 \leq p_i \leq b_1 \\ -b_2 \leq q_i \leq b_2 \end{cases} \quad (i = 1, \dots, n).$$

2) The  $f_i$  are Lipschitzian on  $B^n$ , (as defined in Theorem 3).

3)  $M \lambda_1 \lambda_2 \leq a$ ,  $M \lambda_1 \leq b_2$ ,  $M \lambda_2 \leq b_1$ , where

$$M = \max \{ |f_1|, \dots, |f_n| \} \text{ on } B^n.$$

$$4) \quad \gamma: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \lambda_1 \\ y = \varphi(x) \end{cases} \quad \text{where } \varphi(x) \in C'([0, \lambda_1]), \quad \varphi'(x) \neq 0$$

$$\text{for } x \in [0, \lambda_1] \text{ and } \varphi(0) = \lambda_2, \quad \varphi(\lambda_1) = 0.$$

$\Rightarrow$  5) There exists one and only one set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$ ,

$u_i(x, y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{i,xy}(x, y) \in C(R)$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$ , where

$$R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \lambda_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq \lambda_2 \end{cases}, \text{ such that for each } (x, y) \in R \text{ the point}$$

$$(x, y; u_j(x, y); u_{j,x}(x, y), u_{j,y}(x, y)) \in R, \text{ and}$$

$$u_{i,xy}(x, y) = f_i(x, y; u_j(x, y), u_{j,x}(x, y), u_{j,y}(x, y)),$$

$$u_i(x, \varphi(x)) = u_{i,x}(x, \varphi(x)) = u_{i,y}(x, \varphi(x)) = 0,$$

$$(i = 1, \dots, n), \text{ for each } (x, y) \in R.$$





We may extend the arguments in the proof of Theorem 4a to apply to systems of equations. The extension is practically identical with the previous extension of Theorem 1a to Theorem 3a, except that now Theorem 5 is used to establish existence and uniqueness of the solutions of the system

$$u_{i\lambda,xy} = g_{i\lambda}(x,y; u_{j\lambda}; u_{j\lambda,x}, u_{j\lambda,y}), \quad (i=1, \dots, n),$$

$$(\lambda = 1, 2, \dots),$$

under the Cauchy initial conditions. We obtain the following theorem:

#### Theorem 5a

1)

2)' the  $f_i$  are partially Lipschitzian on  $E^n$ , (as defined in Theorem 3a).

3)

4)

$\Rightarrow$  5)' There exists at least one set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$ ,

$u_i(x,y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{i,xy}(x,y) \in C(R)$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$ , where

$R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}$ , such that for each  $(x,y) \in R$  the point

$(x,y; u_j(x,y); u_{j,x}(x,y), u_{j,y}(x,y)) \in E$ , and

$u_{i,xy}(x,y) = f_i(x,y; u_j(x,y); u_{j,x}(x,y), u_{j,y}(x,y))$ ,

$u_{i,x}(x, \varphi(x)) = u_{i,x}(x, \varphi(x)) = u_{i,y}(x, \varphi(x)) = 0$ ,

$(i = 1, \dots, n)$ , for each  $(x,y) \in P$ .



Remark c), with obvious modifications, and Remark d) to Theorem 4 apply as well as to Theorems 5 and 5a. Moreover, in Theorem 5 (or 5a) we may eliminate hypothesis 3) by demanding that the  $f_1$  be continuous, bounded and Lipschitzian (or partially Lipschitzian) on the infinite cylinder with cross section R.



## CHAPTER IV

Existence Theorems for Canonical  
Hyperbolic First Order Systems

In this chapter, and in Chapters 5 and 6 as well, we shall not give explicit domains of definition for the functions involved in the differential equations. As a consequence, existence will be shown "in the small" only. We do this because our method of attack will not yield any improvement upon the domains of existence, no matter how large the domains of definition are taken, provided the other hypotheses are not weakened. We shall elaborate on this peculiarity in the course of the exposition.

Theorems 6 and 7 below were given by M. CINQUINI-CIERARIO [12] p. 180 in the form stated. A statement under somewhat weaker hypotheses, but based on the same proof, may be found in R. COURANT-D. HILBERT [17] p. 324. We examine the proof to show that the arguments therein are independent of the uniqueness of the solutions to the problems involved. As a consequence, our results in Chapters 2 and 3 apply and we arrive at the improved statements given by Theorems 6a and 7a, where hypothesis 2) of Theorems 6 and 7 is dropped altogether and the corresponding conclusions are altered to read "at least one".

Common hypothesis 1) We shall suppose the functions  $a_{ik}, c_i$ ,  $(i, k=1, \dots, n)$ , of arguments  $x, y, u_1, \dots, u_n$ , to be continuously differentiable with bounded derivatives in a certain domain  $D$ . Fur-



ther, we suppose the determinant

$$(4.1) \quad |a_{ik}| \neq 0 \quad \text{in } D.$$

Under these assumptions, the system

$$(4.2) \quad \begin{cases} A_i(x, y) = \sum_{k=1}^n a_{ik} u_{k,x}(x, y) - c_i = 0, & (i=1, \dots, m < n) \\ B_i(x, y) = \sum_{k=1}^n a_{ik} u_{k,y}(x, y) - c_i = 0, & (i=m+1, \dots, n) \end{cases}$$

is called a canonical hyperbolic first order system.

Theorem 6. (Characteristic initial value problem.)

1)

2) All first derivatives of the functions  $a_{ik}, c_i$ , ( $i, k=1, \dots, n$ ) satisfy a Lipschitz condition with respect to arguments  $u_1, \dots, u_n$  in  $D$ .

$$3) \quad \left. \begin{aligned} U_1(x) &\in C'([0, \ell_1]) \\ V_1(y) &\in C'([0, \ell_2]) \\ U_1(0) &= V_1(0) \end{aligned} \right\} \quad (i=1, \dots, n)$$

Moreover, for each  $x \in [0, \ell_1]$ , the point  $(x, 0; U_j(x)) \in D$

and

$$(4.3) \quad \sum_{k=1}^n a_{ik}(x, 0; U_j(x)) U'_k(x) - c_i(x, 0; U_j(x)) = 0, \\ (i=1, \dots, m < n);$$

and, for each  $y \in [0, \ell_2]$ , the point  $(0, y; V_j(y)) \in D$  and

$$(4.4) \quad \sum_{k=1}^n a_{ik}(0, y; V_j(y)) V'_k(y) - c_i(0, y; V_j(y)) = 0, \\ (i=m+1, \dots, n).$$

---

3. Recall the notation:  $(x, y; U_j(x)) = (x, y; U_1(x), \dots, U_n(x))$ .





$\Rightarrow$  4) There exists one and only one set of functions

$$\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}, u_i(x, y) \in C^1(R_h), u_{i,xy} \in C(R_h), (i = 1, \dots, n),$$

where  $R_h : \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq h\ell_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq h\ell_2 \end{cases}$ , with  $0 < h \leq 1$  and  $h$  sufficiently

small, such that the set of functions satisfies the system (4.2)

for each  $(x, y) \in R_h$  and satisfies the conditions

$$\left. \begin{aligned} u_1(x, 0) &= U_1(x) \quad \text{for } x \in [0, \ell_1] \\ u_1(0, y) &= V_1(y) \quad \text{for } y \in [0, \ell_2] \end{aligned} \right\} (i = 1, \dots, n).$$

Theorem 6a.

1)

3)

$\Rightarrow$  4)' There exists at least one set of functions, etc. (as in Theorem 6).

Theorem 7. (Cauchy problem.)

1)

2) (as in Theorem 6.)

$$5) \quad \gamma : \begin{cases} x = x(\tau) \\ y = y(\tau) \end{cases} \quad \text{for } \tau \in [0, 1], \quad x(\tau) \text{ and } y(\tau) \in C^1([0, 1])$$

and strictly monotone, i.e.,  $\dot{x} \neq 0$ ,  $\dot{y} \neq 0$  on  $[0, 1]$ .

$U_i(\tau) \in C^1([0, 1])$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$ . For each  $\tau \in [0, 1]$ , the point  $(x(\tau), y(\tau); U_i(\tau)) \in \bar{\Omega}$ .

$\Rightarrow$  6) There exists one and only one set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$ ,

$u_i(x, y) \in C^1(K_\gamma)$ ,  $u_{i,xy}(x, y) = \dots$  (1.7),  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$ , where  $K_\gamma$

is a sufficiently small neighborhood of the curve  $\gamma$ , such that



the set of functions satisfies the system (4.2) for each  $(x, y) \in R_\gamma$  and satisfies the conditions

$$u_i(x(\tau), y(\tau)) = U_i(\tau) \quad \text{for } \tau \in [0, 1], \quad (i = 1, \dots, n).$$

### Theorem 7a

1)

5)

$\Rightarrow$  6)' There exists at least one set of functions etc. (as in Theorem 7.)

The proofs of these theorems are contained in the following argument:

Suppose we have a set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$ , either as a solution to the characteristic initial value problem above on a domain  $R_\eta$ , or as a solution to the Cauchy problem above on a domain  $R_\gamma$ . Then for either case,

$$(4.5) \quad A_{i,y} = \sum_{k=1}^n a_{ik} u_{k,xy} + \sum_{k=1}^n \left[ a_{ik,y} + \sum_{r=1}^n \frac{\partial a_{ik}}{\partial u_r} u_{r,y} \right] u_{k,x} - c_{i,y} - \sum_{k=1}^n \frac{\partial c_i}{\partial u_k} u_{k,y} = 0, \quad (i = 1, \dots, m < n),$$

$$(4.6) \quad B_{i,x} = \sum_{k=1}^n a_{ik} u_{k,xy} + \sum_{k=1}^n \left[ a_{ik,x} + \sum_{r=1}^n \frac{\partial a_{ik}}{\partial u_r} u_{r,x} \right] u_{k,y} - c_{i,x} - \sum_{k=1}^n \frac{\partial c_i}{\partial u_k} u_{k,x} = 0, \quad (i = m+1, \dots, n).$$

Equations (4.5) and (4.6) are  $n$  linear algebraic equations in the



$n$  unknowns  $u_{1,xy}$ . Since the determinant of this system,  $|a_{1k}|$ , does not vanish over the domain in question, we may solve the system to obtain explicitly

$$(4.7) \quad u_{1,xy} = f_1(x, y; u_j; u_{j,x}, u_{j,y}), \quad (j = 1, \dots, n).$$

Under hypothesis 1) alone, the  $f_1$  are continuous and partially Lipschitzian over any bounded domain in the  $3n + 2$  dimensional  $(x, y; u_j; u_{j,x}, u_{j,y})$ -space where  $(x, y; u_j) \in D$ . If hypothesis 2) also applies, the  $f_1$  are "fully" Lipschitzian over any such domain.

Consider Theorems 6 and 6a. The characteristic initial conditions imposed therein, coupled with the system (4.7), form a problem of the type considered in Theorems 3 and 3a, respectively. (Chapter 2). We have shown above that any solution of a canonical hyperbolic system is also a solution of a particular system of type (4.7). If we now demonstrate the converse for characteristic initial conditions, i.e. that any solution of the derived system (4.7) is also a solution of the original system (4.2), then Theorems 6 and 6a follow directly from Theorems 3 and 3a respectively.

Suppose we have a set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$  as a solution of (4.7) over a certain domain including the initial characteristics. By (4.5) and (4.6), which are merely alternative forms of (4.7), we have



$$(4.8) \quad \begin{cases} A_{i,y}(x,y) = 0 & , \quad (i = 1, \dots, m < n) \\ B_{i,x}(x,y) = 0 & , \quad (i = m+1, \dots, n) \end{cases}$$

over this domain. But, by (4.3) and (4.4) of hypothesis 3) to both Theorems 6 and 6a, we have that

$$(4.9) \quad \begin{cases} A_i(x,0) = 0 & , \quad (i = 1, \dots, m < n) \\ B_i(0,y) = 0 & , \quad (i = m+1, \dots, n), \end{cases}$$

whence

$$\begin{aligned} A_i(x,y) &\equiv 0 & , \quad (i = 1, \dots, m < n), \\ B_i(x,y) &\equiv 0 & , \quad (i = m+1, \dots, n), \end{aligned}$$

throughout the domain. Hence the converse is shown.

For the Cauchy problem considered in Theorems 7 and 7a, we observe first that we can determine  $u_{i,x}(x(\tau), y(\tau))$  and  $u_{i,y}(x(\tau), y(\tau))$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$ , as functions continuous for each  $\tau \in [0,1]$ , solely from the prescription of  $u_i(x(\tau), y(\tau)) = U_i(\tau)$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, n)$ , and the requirement that the canonical hyperbolic system (4.2) must be satisfied at each point of  $\gamma$ . For, since  $\dot{x} + \dot{y}^2 \neq 0$  along  $\gamma$ , we may write the strip conditions

$$(4.10) \quad \dot{u}_i = p_i \dot{x} + q_i \dot{y}, \quad (i = 1, \dots, n),$$

as one of

$$(4.11) \quad q_i = \frac{1}{\dot{y}} (\dot{u}_i - p_i \dot{x}) \quad \text{or} \quad p_i = \frac{1}{\dot{x}} (\dot{u}_i - q_i \dot{y}), \quad (i = 1, \dots, n).$$

Consider a particular point  $P \in \gamma$  where  $\dot{y} \neq 0$ . Here we substitute  $q_i = q_{i,y} = \frac{1}{\dot{y}} (\dot{u}_i - p_i \dot{x})$  into equations  $B_i(\tau) = 0$ ,  $(i = m+1, \dots, n)$ . These, together with the equations  $A_i(\tau) = 0$ ,  $(i = 1, \dots, m < n)$ ,





form a linear algebraic system in the  $p_i = u_{i,x}(P)$  with determinant  $|a_{ik}| \neq 0$ . Thus the  $p_i$  are uniquely determined at  $P$ , and, by (4.11), the  $q_i$  as well are uniquely determined at  $P$ . If  $\dot{y} = 0$  at  $P$ , then  $\dot{x} \neq 0$  there and a similar argument applies utilizing  $p_i = \frac{1}{\dot{x}} (\dot{u}_i - q_i \dot{y})$ .

Thus we have, in effect, prescribed all three sets  $u_i, u_{i,x}, u_{i,y}$ , ( $i = 1, \dots, n$ ), along  $\gamma$  once the  $u_i$  are prescribed along  $\gamma$  and the  $u_{i,x}$  and the  $u_{i,y}$  are merely required to satisfy the strip conditions (4.10) and the canonical hyperbolic system at (4.2) at each point of  $\gamma$ .

Suppose we have a set of functions  $\{u_1, \dots, u_n\}$  as a solution of

(4.7)  $u_{i,xy} = f_i(x, y; u_j; u_{j,x}, u_{j,y})$ , ( $i = 1, \dots, n$ ) in a neighborhood of the initial curve  $\gamma$  and taking, with their first derivatives, precisely the above determined values at each point of  $\gamma$ . Then by (4.5) and (4.6), the fact that these functions and their first derivatives satisfy the canonical hyperbolic system (4.2) at each point of  $\gamma$  implies further that the system (4.2) corresponding to (4.7) is satisfied everywhere in the neighborhood in question.

With hypothesis 2) imposed, system (4.7) and the initial data on  $\gamma$  satisfy the hypotheses of Theorem 5, while without hypothesis 2), system (4.7) and the initial data on  $\gamma$  satisfy the hypotheses of Theorem 5a. But since we have shown above that each solution of (4.7) is a solution of the corresponding canonical



hyperbolic system (4.2), we have that Theorem 7 is a consequence of Theorem 5, while Theorem 7a is a consequence of Theorem 5a.

In these four theorems we are unable to prescribe the domain of definition of the functions

$$f_i(x, y; u_j; p_j, q_j), \quad (i = 1, \dots, n),$$

in such a way as to insure existence of a solution throughout

$$R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l_1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq l_2 \end{cases}. \quad \text{This is because the } f_i \text{ are continuous for}$$

all  $p_j$  and  $q_j$ , ( $j = 1, \dots, n$ ), but may turn out to be bounded only when these variables are restricted to finite domains. The following example demonstrates why the existence of solutions can be found only "in the small".

Example 3. Consider the characteristic initial value problem for the system

$$\begin{aligned} u_{1,xy} &= u_{1,x}^2, & u_1(x, -1) &= x, & u_1(0, y) &= 0 \\ u_{2,xy} &= 0, & u_2(x, -1) &= 0, & u_2(0, y) &= 0 \\ &\vdots & & \vdots & & \\ u_{n,xy} &= 0, & u_n(x, -1) &= 0, & u_n(0, y) &= 0. \end{aligned}$$

By quadratures, we obtain the solution  $u_1(x, y) = \frac{x^2}{y}$ , while  $u_2 = \dots = u_n = 0$ , quite obviously. The  $f_i$  corresponding to this problem possess derivatives of all orders for all values of all variables. However,  $f_1 = u_{1,x}^2$  becomes unbounded as the argument  $u_{1,x}$  increases indefinitely in absolute value. We note that, despite the specification of initial data everywhere along the



intersecting characteristics  $x = 0$  and  $y = -1$ , the first function in the solution, namely  $u_1$ , has a discontinuity across the line  $y = 0$ . Hence this example typifies those cases for which solutions exist "in the small" only.

We note that Remark d) of Chapter III applies as well to hypothesis 5) of Theorems 7 and 7a. The statement is that

$$\gamma : \begin{cases} x = x(\tau) \\ y = y(\tau) \end{cases} \text{ for } \tau \in [0,1] \text{ need only have } x(\tau) \text{ and}$$

$y(\tau) \in C^1([0,1])$ , monotone, and with  $\dot{x}^2 + \dot{y}^2 \neq 0$  at each point of  $\gamma$ . In fact, the argument in the proof above applies directly to this statement.



## CHAPTER V.

The Cauchy Problem for  $F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0$ .

In this chapter we concern ourselves with the Cauchy problem for the general non-linear second order partial differential equation in the hyperbolic domain. Specifically, the problem is to determine an integral surface of the equation

$$(1.1) \quad F(x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t) = 0$$

such that the hyperbolic condition

$$(1.3) \quad F_s^2 - 4 F_r F_t > 0$$

is satisfied thereon; moreover, the integral surface must have a second order contact with a given second order strip which is nowhere a characteristic strip.

In his celebrated paper [10], H. LEWY successfully attacks this problem by reducing equation (1.1) to a system of first order partial differential equations for the unknowns  $x,y; u; p,q; r,s,t$  as functions of the parameters  $\lambda$  and  $\mu$  of the two families of characteristics on the integral surface in question. LEWY's existence proof for the system is based on a finite difference argument. However, the system is of canonical hyperbolic form and the theorem of E. CINQUINI-CIPIRANO, Theorem 7 of Chapter IV, is immediately applicable and insures existence and uniqueness of the solution in a sufficiently small neighborhood of the initial strip. Moreover, as demonstrated below, Theorem 7a may be used to effect an improvement on LEWY's work.

We present simultaneously LEWY's original theorem and our





improvement on it. LEWY's theorem is obtained by omitting the parentheses. Our theorem is obtained by replacing the underscored statements by the corresponding ones in the parentheses.

Theorem 3 (3a)

$$1) \quad S^2: \begin{cases} x = x(\tau) \\ y = y(\tau) \\ u = u(\tau) \\ p = p(\tau) \\ q = q(\tau) \\ r = r(\tau) \\ s = s(\tau) \\ t = t(\tau) \end{cases} \quad \text{for } \tau \in [0,1] \text{ is a nowhere character-} \\ \text{istic second order strip,}$$

i.e.  $x, y, u, p, q, r, s, t(\tau) \in C^1([0,1])$ , and for each  $\tau \in [0,1]$ ,

- i)  $\dot{x}^2 + \dot{y}^2 \neq 0$ ,
- ii)  $p_r \dot{y}^2 - p_s \dot{x} \dot{y} + p_t \dot{x}^2 \neq 0$ ,
- iii)  $p_s^2 - 4 p_r p_t > 0$ ,
- iv)  $\Psi(x(\tau), y(\tau); u(\tau); p(\tau), q(\tau); r(\tau), s(\tau), t(\tau)) = 0$ .

2)  $\tau \in C^{1,1}(\in C^1)$  is a certain neighborhood of  $S^2$ .

3) There exists one and only one (at least one) integral surface  $J: u = u(x, y)$  of the equation  $\Psi(x, y, u; p, q; r, s, t) = 0$  such that  $u(x, y) \in C^{1,1}$  in a sufficiently small neighborhood of the base curve  $\gamma: \begin{cases} x = x(\tau) \\ y = y(\tau) \end{cases}$  for  $\tau \in [0,1]$ , and such that  $J: u = u(x, y)$  has a second order contact with the strip  $S^2$ .



### Proof

We first demonstrate that any solution of the above problem, together with its derivatives of the first and second orders, represents a solution of a particular canonical hyperbolic system under the same boundary conditions.

We assume that  $F_R \neq 0$  and  $F_t \neq 0$  in the domains considered in the following argument. This may be done without loss of generality. For, by Definition 1a, a characteristic base curve must satisfy

$$(1.5) \quad \begin{aligned} 1) \quad & F_R \dot{y}^2 - F_S \dot{y} \dot{x} + F_t \dot{x}^2 = 0, \\ 2) \quad & \dot{x}^2 + \dot{y}^2 \neq 0. \end{aligned}$$

Suppose at a point of  $S^2$  that  $F_R = 0$ . Then  $\dot{x} = 0$  represents the vertical tangent taken by one of the characteristic base curves through the projection of this point onto the  $xy$  plane. Conversely, if one of the characteristic base curves through a point in the projection of  $S^2$  has a vertical tangent, then  $\dot{x} = 0$  there and, consequently,  $F_R = 0$  at the corresponding point on  $S^2$ . Likewise,  $F_t = 0$  if and only if  $\dot{y} = 0$ , in the sense above. Thus, by a suitable coordinate rotation in the  $xy$  plane, we may insure that  $F_R \neq 0$  and  $F_t \neq 0$  in a neighborhood of the point in question on  $S^2$ . Granting that this is a local property only and that the particular rotation performed may introduce values of  $F_R = 0$  or  $F_t = 0$  at some other suitably distant points of  $S^2$ , we observe that this local property is sufficient because our proof is ultimately based on Theorems 4 and 5a of Chapter 1. In those



theorems the integral equation statement of the problem made it plainly evident that the value of the integral at any point  $P$  depended only upon the portion of the initial curve cut off by the two characteristics intersecting at  $P$ . Consequently, we may consider the arguments below as applying in succession to small overlapping segments of  $S^2$ , with coordinate axes rotated suitably for each segment considered. (See also R. COURANT - D. HILBERT [17] p. 323 and p. 332.)

Let us assume that we have an integral surface  $J: u=u(x,y)$  satisfying the conditions of either Theorem 8 or Theorem 8a. Then by (1.5) we conclude that the related characteristic base curves are the two one-parameter families of curves determined by the equations

$$(5.1) \quad y_\lambda = \rho_1 x_\lambda,$$

$$(5.2) \quad y_\mu = \rho_2 x_\mu,$$

where

$$(5.3) \quad \rho_1 = \frac{p_s + \sqrt{p_s^2 - 4 p_r p_t}}{2 p_r},$$

$$(5.4) \quad \rho_2 = \frac{p_s - \sqrt{p_s^2 - 4 p_r p_t}}{2 p_r}.$$

$\rho_1$  and  $\rho_2$  are functions of the variables  $x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t$  and  $\rho_1 \neq \rho_2$  in a neighborhood of  $S^2$  by the hyperbolic condition (1.3).

Consider the coordinate transformation

$$(5.5) \quad \begin{cases} x = x(\lambda, \mu) \\ y = y(\lambda, \mu) \end{cases}.$$



The Jacobian of this transformation,

$$(5.6) \quad y_{\lambda} x_{\mu} - y_{\mu} x_{\lambda} = (\rho_1 - \rho_2) x_{\lambda} x_{\mu},$$

does not vanish in a vicinity of the projection of  $S^2$ . This follows since  $\rho_1 \neq \rho_2$ ; while  $x_{\lambda} = 0$  would, by (5.1), imply  $y_{\lambda} = 0$ , contradicting the requirement  $\dot{x}^2 + \dot{y}^2 \neq 0$ , (similarly for  $x_{\mu}$ ). Hence the inverse transformation,

$$(5.7) \quad \begin{cases} \lambda = \lambda(x, y) \\ \mu = \mu(x, y) \end{cases},$$

exists in a vicinity of the projection of  $S^2$ .

Along the characteristics on  $J: u=u(x, y)$  certain additional equations must be satisfied. These are determined as follows:

Since  $F \in C'''$  ( $\in C''$ ) and  $u \in C'''$ , we obtain by differentiation

$$(5.8) \quad \begin{cases} p r_x + r s_x + t t_x = - [F]_x \\ x_{\lambda} r_x + y_{\lambda} s_x = r_{\lambda} \\ x_{\lambda} s_x + y_{\lambda} t_x = s_{\lambda}, \end{cases}$$

where

$$(5.9) \quad [F]_x = p r + r^2 q + F_{xx} + r_x.$$

similarly,

$$(5.10) \quad \begin{cases} r r_y + s s_y + t t_y = - [F]_y \\ x_{\lambda} r_y + y_{\lambda} s_y = s_{\lambda} \\ x_{\lambda} s_y + y_{\lambda} t_y = t_{\lambda}, \end{cases}$$

where





$$(5.11) \quad [F]_y = F_p s + F_q t + F_u q + F_y.$$

Since  $\lambda$  is the parameter for one family of characteristic curves and, consequently, is the path parameter along each of the curves of the other family, the determinant

$$(5.12) \quad \begin{vmatrix} F_r & F_s & F_t \\ x_\lambda & y_\lambda & 0 \\ 0 & x_\lambda & y_\lambda \end{vmatrix} = F_r y_\lambda^2 - F_s y_\lambda x_\lambda + F_t x_\lambda^2 = 0.$$

Hence the quantities on the right-hand side in each of the systems (5.8) and (5.10) must be linearly dependent, i.e. in each system the augmented matrix of coefficients must be of rank less than three. Consequently,

$$(5.13) \quad \begin{vmatrix} F_r & F_t & [F]_x \\ x_\lambda & 0 & -r_\lambda \\ 0 & y_\lambda & -s_\lambda \end{vmatrix} = F_r r_\lambda y_\lambda + F_t s_\lambda x_\lambda + [F]_x x_\lambda y_\lambda = 0.$$

Recalling the assumption made without loss,

$x_\lambda = \frac{1}{\rho_1} y_\lambda$  and  $y_\lambda \neq 0$ , equation (5.13) reduces to

$$(5.14) \quad F_r r_\lambda + \frac{1}{\rho_1} F_t s_\lambda + [F]_x x_\lambda = 0.$$

Likewise, from (5.10) we obtain the linear dependence of the right-hand terms in the form

$$(5.15) \quad \rho_1 F_s s_\lambda + F_t t_\lambda + [F]_y y_\lambda = 0.$$

Along the curves of the other family of characteristics the following relations must be satisfied. These are obtained in a



fashion completely analogous to that used in obtaining (5.14) and (5.15):

$$(5.16) \quad P_r r_\mu + \frac{1}{\rho_2} P_t s_\mu + [P]_x x_\mu = 0$$

$$(5.17) \quad \rho_2 P_r s_\mu + P_t t_\mu + [P]_y y_\mu = 0.$$

In addition, the strip conditions

$$(1.8) \quad \dot{u} = p \dot{x} + q \dot{y}$$

$$(1.9) \quad \begin{cases} \dot{p} = r \dot{x} + s \dot{y} \\ \dot{q} = s \dot{x} + t \dot{y} \end{cases}$$

must be satisfied along any curve lying on  $J: u=u(x,y)$ . In particular, they must be satisfied along any characteristic on  $J$ .

From equations (5.1), (5.2), (5.14) through (5.17), (1.8) and (1.9) we obtain the following system of "characteristic equations" i.e. equations which must be satisfied along the characteristics on any integral surface  $J$ :

$$(5.18) \quad \left. \begin{aligned} \varphi_1 &= y_\lambda - \rho_1 x_\lambda = 0 \\ \varphi_2 &= P_r r_\lambda + \frac{1}{\rho_1} P_t s_\lambda + [P]_x x_\lambda = 0 \\ \varphi_3 &= \rho_1 P_r s_\lambda + P_t t_\lambda + [P]_y y_\lambda = 0 \\ \varphi_4 &= u_\lambda - p x_\lambda - q y_\lambda = 0 \\ \varphi_5 &= p_\lambda - r x_\lambda - s y_\lambda = 0 \\ \varphi_6 &= q_\lambda - s x_\lambda - t y_\lambda = 0 \end{aligned} \right\} \text{System A}$$
  

$$\left. \begin{aligned} \psi_1 &= y_\mu - \rho_2 x_\mu = 0 \\ \psi_2 &= P_r r_\mu + \frac{1}{\rho_2} P_t s_\mu + [P]_x x_\mu = 0 \end{aligned} \right\}$$



$$\begin{aligned}
 (5.18) \quad & \left. \begin{aligned}
 \psi_3 &= \rho_2 F_r s \mu + F_t t \mu + [F]_y y \mu = 0 \\
 \psi_4 &= u_\mu - p x_\mu - q y_\mu = 0 \\
 \psi_5 &= p_\mu - r x_\mu - s y_\mu = 0 \\
 \psi_6 &= q_\mu - s x_\mu - t y_\mu = 0
 \end{aligned} \right\} \text{System B}
 \end{aligned}$$

We observe that System A of (5.18) is of canonical hyperbolic form in  $x, y$ ;  $u$ ;  $p, q$ ;  $r, s, t$  as functions of  $\lambda$  and  $\mu$ . Since for Theorem 8,  $F \in C'''$ , while for Theorem 8a,  $F \in C''$ , the coefficients of all equations in (5.18) are functions of class  $C''$  for Theorem 8, and of class  $C'$  for Theorem 8a. Moreover, the determinant of the matrix of coefficients for System A, is, after interchange of rows and columns,

$$(5.19) \quad \begin{vmatrix}
 -\rho_1 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 -\rho_2 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 * & 0 & F_r \frac{1}{\rho_1} t & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 0 & * & 0 & \rho_1 F_r F_t & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 * & 0 & F_r \frac{1}{\rho_2} t & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 * & * & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
 * & * & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
 * & * & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= F_r F_t^2 \cdot \frac{(\rho_1 - \rho_2)^2}{\rho_1 \rho_2},$$

where the coefficients designated only by asterisks, \*, do not contribute to the value of the determinant. Since  $F_r \neq 0$ ,  $F_t \neq 0$  and  $\rho_1 \neq \rho_2$  in a neighborhood of  $\lambda^0$ , the determinant (5.19) does not vanish therein. Hence any solution  $J: u=a(x, y)$  of the problem of Theorem 8, together with its first and second derivatives,



satisfies the hypotheses for Theorem 7; because the requirement that  $F \in C'''$  is certainly sufficient to insure that the first derivatives of the coefficients of System A be Lipschitzian with respect to variables  $x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t$ . Moreover, the requirement in Theorem 8a that  $F \in C'$  insures that the coefficients of System A are of class  $C'$ , as demanded by Theorem 7a.

In the  $\lambda\mu$ , or characteristic, plane, the initial base curve has the parametric form

$$\gamma : \begin{cases} \lambda = \lambda(x(\tau), y(\tau)) & \text{for } \tau \in [0, 1], \\ \mu = \mu(x(\tau), y(\tau)) \end{cases}$$

and is nowhere parallel to either the  $\lambda$  or  $\mu$  axes. Consequently,

$\gamma$  may be expressed in the non-parametric form

$$\lambda = \varphi(\mu)$$

where  $\varphi(\mu) \in C'$  and  $\varphi'(\mu) \neq 0$ . If we introduce  $\lambda' = \lambda$  and  $\mu' = -\varphi(\mu)$  as new characteristic parameters, we observe that equations (5.18) remain unaltered in form. Hence we may assume, without loss, that the initial base curve  $\gamma$  has the representation

$$(5.20) \quad \lambda + \mu = 0$$

in the  $\lambda\mu$  plane.

We now demonstrate that any solution of System A satisfying the given Cauchy initial conditions is also a solution of the problem of Theorems 8 and 8a. This done, Theorems 8 and 8a are immediate consequences of Theorems 7 and 7a, respectively.

Following J. HADAMARD [11] p. 504, we show that for each set of functions satisfying System A and the initial conditions on





$\lambda + \mu = 0$ , the System B is likewise satisfied. Note that in this part of the argument we cannot admit that  $p, q, r, s$  and  $t$  are derivatives of  $u$ . This is now a matter of proof.

Differentiating  $F(x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t)$  by  $\lambda$  and observing equations (5.18), we obtain

$$(5.21) \quad \frac{dF}{d\lambda} = \varphi_2 + \varphi_3 + F_u \varphi_4 + F_p \varphi_5 + F_q \varphi_6.$$

Hence  $\frac{dF}{d\lambda} = 0$  for each set of functions satisfying System A. However, by hypothesis,  $F = 0$  along  $\lambda + \mu = 0$ . Thus  $F \equiv 0$  throughout that region where the set of functions satisfying System A is defined. This in turn implies that

$$(5.22) \quad \frac{dF}{d\mu} = \psi_2 + \psi_3 + F_u \psi_4 + F_p \psi_5 + F_q \psi_6 = 0 \text{ throughout the same region. By hypothesis, } \psi_2 = 0 \text{ in this region, hence}$$

$$(5.23) \quad \psi_3 = -F_u \psi_4 - F_p \psi_5 - F_q \psi_6$$

therein.

Since  $\rho_1 \rho_2 = \frac{F_t}{F_r}$ , we obtain from (5.18) by simple algebraic operations

$$(5.24) \quad \frac{\rho_1 y_\mu}{F_t} \varphi_2 = r_\lambda x_\mu + s_\lambda y_\mu + H,$$

$$(5.25) \quad \frac{\rho_2 y_\lambda}{F_t} \psi_2 = r_\mu x_\lambda + s_\mu y_\lambda + H,$$

where

$$(5.26) \quad H = \frac{y_\lambda y_\mu}{F_t} [F]_x = \frac{x_\lambda x_\mu}{F_r} [F]_x;$$

$$(5.27) \quad \frac{y_\mu}{F_t} \varphi_3 = s_\lambda x_\mu + t_\lambda y_\mu + K,$$



$$(5.28) \quad \frac{y_\lambda}{F_t} \psi_3 = s_\mu x_\lambda + t_\mu y_\lambda + K,$$

where

$$(5.29) \quad K = \frac{y_\lambda y_\mu}{F_t} [F]_y = \frac{x_\lambda x_\mu}{F_r} [F]_y.$$

By Theorem 7 or Theorem 7a, the functions of the set satisfying System A and the Cauchy initial data are continuously differentiable and possess continuous mixed second derivatives. Thus we may perform the differentiations in the following relations:

$$(5.30) \quad \begin{aligned} \psi_{4,\lambda} - \varphi_{4,\mu} &= p_\lambda x_\mu + q_\lambda y_\mu - p_\mu x_\lambda - q_\mu y_\lambda \\ &= \varphi_5 x_\mu - \varphi_6 y_\mu - \psi_5 x_\lambda - \psi_6 y_\lambda; \end{aligned}$$

$$(5.31) \quad \begin{aligned} \psi_{5,\lambda} - \varphi_{5,\mu} &= r_\lambda x_\mu + s_\lambda y_\mu - r_\mu x_\lambda - s_\mu y_\lambda \\ &= \frac{p_1 y_\mu}{F_t} \varphi_2 - \frac{p_2 y_\lambda}{F_t} \psi_2, \end{aligned}$$

by (5.24) and (5.25) above;

$$(5.32) \quad \begin{aligned} \psi_{6,\lambda} - \varphi_{6,\mu} &= s_\mu x_\lambda + t_\mu y_\lambda - s_\lambda x_\mu - t_\lambda y_\mu \\ &= \frac{y_\lambda}{F_t} \psi_3 - \frac{y_\mu}{F_t} \varphi_3. \end{aligned}$$

by (5.27) and (5.28) above. But System A is satisfied, hence (5.30), (5.31) and (5.32), by virtue of (5.23), reduce to

$$(5.33) \quad \begin{cases} \psi_{4,\lambda} &= -\psi_5 x_\lambda - \psi_6 y_\lambda \\ \psi_{5,\lambda} &= 0 \\ \psi_{6,\lambda} &= \frac{-y_\lambda}{F_t} (F_u \psi_4 + F_p \psi_5 + F_q \psi_6). \end{cases}$$



In (5.33) all functions are known except  $\psi_4, \psi_5, \psi_6$  and their derivatives with respect to  $\lambda$ . Moreover, along  $\lambda = -\mu$  System B is satisfied, i.e.  $\psi_4 = \psi_5 = \psi_6 = 0$  for  $\lambda = -\mu$ . For fixed  $\mu$  we may consider (5.33) as a homogeneous system of linear first order ordinary differential equations under homogeneous onepoint boundary conditions. This system has the unique solution

$$\psi_4 = \psi_5 = \psi_6 = 0$$

throughout the region of definition of the set of functions satisfying System A. By (5.23),  $\psi_3 = 0$  also, and the System B is shown to be dependent upon the System A in the sense above.

From the functions  $x = x(\lambda, \mu)$ ,  $y = y(\lambda, \mu)$  of the set satisfying System A, we may form the inverse functions  $\lambda = \lambda(x, y)$ ,  $\mu = \mu(x, y)$ , since the Jacobian

$$(5.6) \quad y_\lambda x_\mu - y_\mu x_\lambda = (\rho_1 - \rho_2) x_\lambda x_\mu$$

does not vanish. Hence we may express the function  $u = u(\lambda, \mu)$  as a function of the independent variables  $x$  and  $y$ .

We now need to show only that

$$(5.34) \quad p = u_x, \quad q = u_y, \quad r = u_{xx}, \quad s = u_{xy} \quad \text{and} \quad t = u_{yy}$$

throughout the above region to complete the proof.

$$\text{Now} \quad \varphi_4 = u_\lambda - px_\lambda - qy_\lambda = 0$$

$$\psi_4 = u_\mu - px_\mu - qy_\mu = 0,$$

while the determinant of this linear system is the Jacobian (5.6) and hence does not vanish. Thus there exists a unique solution.



But  $p = u_x$ ,  $q = u_y$  obviously satisfies and hence represents the unique solution.

Similarly,

$$\mathcal{U}_5 = u_{x,\lambda} - rx_\lambda - sy_\lambda = 0$$

$$\Psi_5 = u_{x,\mu} - rx_\mu - sy_\mu = 0,$$

hence  $r = u_{xx}$  and  $s = u_{xy}$ ;

$$\mathcal{U}_6 = u_{y,\lambda} - sx_\lambda - ty_\lambda = 0$$

$$\Psi_6 = u_{y,\mu} - sx_\mu - ty_\mu = 0,$$

hence  $t = u_{yy}$  and  $u_{yx} = u_{xy} = s$ . The proof is now complete.





## CHAPTER VI

## The Characteristic Initial Value Problem for

$$F(x,y;u;p,q;r,s,t) = 0.$$

The whole idea of a characteristic initial value problem for the equation

$$(1.1) \quad F(x,y;u;p,q;r,s,t) = 0$$

appears paradoxical at first glance. In the Cauchy problem the prescribed initial data was sufficient to determine whether or not the projection of the initial curve was characteristic. In this problem, however, we merely prescribe two intersecting space curves through which an integral surface of the equation (1.1) must pass. Since the characteristics are, in general, dependent on the integral surface in question, it would appear impossible to determine, a priori, whether or not the prescribed initial curves have characteristic projections.

That such is not the case is demonstrated by M. CINQUINI-CIABRINI [13]. In this paper she treats the characteristic initial value problem as a special case of the more general Goursat problem, i.e. where two arbitrary intersecting space curves are prescribed through which an integral surface of (1.1) must pass. Commencing on p. 220, she gives the necessary and sufficient conditions that these curves be characteristic to any integral surface passing through them. We call curves satisfying these conditions "intrinsically characteristic" curves.



In this chapter we examine her development, for the particular case of the characteristic initial value problem, up to the point where a modified form of the system of characteristic equations (5.18) and the above necessary and sufficient conditions are obtained. There are two important differences between her development and that of H. LEWY given in the preceding chapter. First, she transforms the initial curves into the coordinate axes. Since these curves are characteristic, this implies immediately that  $P_r = 0$  and  $P_t = 0$  at the origin. Thus many of the divisions performed in Chapter V are now invalidated. Second, she is able to solve (1.1) explicitly for  $s$ , obtaining

$$s = f(x, y; u; p, q; r, t)$$

and thus to reduce the number of equations in the system of characteristic equations by two.

We do not follow the remainder of her existence proof, in which she reduces the system of characteristic equations to an integral equation form and then applies successive approximations to obtain the existence of a unique solution to the general Cauchy problem. Instead we deal directly with the special case of the characteristic initial value problem by a method analogous to that of Chapter V. Such an approach is indicated by M. CINQUINI-CIBRARIO, herself, [12] p.180, footnote 8. She states, in effect, that the following Theorem 2 can be shown to be a consequence of Theorem 6, Chapter IV. We present this proof in detail and, in addition, we extend it to apply to the derivation of Theorem 9a as a consequence of Theorem 6a. The improvement obtained corresponds to that of



Chapter V for the Cauchy problem. Namely, the requirement that  $F \in C'''$  is reduced to require merely that  $F \in C''$  while the conclusion is altered to read "at least one solution" instead of "one and only one solution".

Theorem 9

$$1) \quad \Gamma_1: \begin{cases} \Gamma_1: \begin{cases} x_1 - \xi \leq x \leq x_1 + \xi & , f_1(x) \in C''([x_1 - \xi, x_1 + \xi]) \\ y = f_1(x) & F_1(x) \in C''([x_1 - \xi, x_1 + \xi]). \\ u = F_1(x) \end{cases} \\ \Gamma_2: \begin{cases} x = f_2(y) & , f_2(y) \in C''([y_1 - \eta, y_1 + \eta]) \\ y_1 - \eta \leq y \leq y_1 + \eta & F_2(y) \in C''([y_1 - \eta, y_1 + \eta]) \\ u = F_2(y) \end{cases} \end{cases}$$

The point  $(x_1, y_1)$  is the only point of intersection of  $\Gamma_1$  and  $\Gamma_2$  and it is interior to both curves. Moreover,  $F_1(x_1) = F_2(y_1)$  and  $f_1'(x_1)f_2'(y_1) \neq 1$ . (i.e.  $\Gamma_1$  and  $\Gamma_2$  do not have a common tangent at the point  $(x_1, y_1)$ .)

2)  $\Gamma_1$  and  $\Gamma_2$  are "intrinsically characteristic" in a neighborhood of their point of intersection, i.e. they meet the necessary and sufficient conditions, given below, that they be characteristic to any integral surface of

$$(1.1) \quad F(x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t) = 0$$

passing through them. As we shall see below, this hypothesis, together with hypothesis 1), tacitly implies that at the intersection point  $(x_1, y_1, u_1)$  of  $\Gamma_1$  and  $\Gamma_2$  the values  $p_1, q_1, r_1, s_1,$



$t_1$ ), the hyperbolic condition

$$F_{s_1}^2 - 4 F_{r_1} F_{t_1} > 0,$$

is satisfied, (notation:  $F_{s_1} = F_s(x_1, y_1; u_1; p_1, q_1; r_1, s_1, t_1)$ , etc.)

3)  $F \in C'''$  in a neighborhood of the point

$$(x_1, y_1; u_1; p_1, q_1; r_1, s_1, t_1).$$

$\Rightarrow$  4) There exists one and only one integral surface  $J_{ruu}(x, y)$  of  $F(x, y; u; p, q; r, s, t) = 0$ , defined and of class  $C'''$  in a sufficiently small neighborhood of the point  $(x_1, y_1)$  and passing through subarcs of  $\Gamma_1$  and  $\Gamma_2$  intersecting at the point  $(x_1, y_1, u_1)$ .

#### Theorem 9a

1)

2)

3)'  $F \in C''$  in a neighborhood of the point

$$(x_1, y_1; u_1; p_1, q_1; r_1, s_1, t_1).$$

$\Rightarrow$  4)' There exists at least one integral surface etc.

(as in Theorem 9).

#### Proof of Theorems 9 and 9a

We first perform the coordinate transformation

$$(6.1) \quad \begin{cases} \bar{x} = x - f_2(y) \\ \bar{y} = y - f_1(x) \end{cases}$$

taking  $\Gamma_1$  into the  $\bar{x}$  axis,  $\Gamma_2$  into the  $\bar{y}$  axis and the point  $(x_1, y_1)$  into the origin. This transformation is univalent in a





neighborhood of  $(x_1, y_1)$  since the Jacobian

$$(6.2) \quad 1 - f_1'(x_1)f_2'(y_1) \neq 0$$

by hypothesis 1). Geometrically, this means that  $\gamma_1$  and  $\gamma_2$  do not have a common tangent at their point of intersection.

Without loss, we may assume homogeneous initial conditions. For, suppose we have an integral surface  $J: u = u(x, y)$  of equation (1.1) passing through the curves  $\gamma_1$  and  $\gamma_2$ . Then by the above transformation, considering (6.2),

$$(6.3) \quad u(x, y) = \bar{u}(\bar{x}(x, y), \bar{y}(x, y)),$$

and hence for any such integral surface

$$(6.4) \quad \begin{cases} P_1(x) = u(x, f_1(x)) = \bar{u}(\bar{x}(x, f_1(x)), 0), \\ P_2(y) = u(f_2(y), y) = \bar{u}(0, \bar{y}(f_2(y), y)). \end{cases}$$

Letting

$$(6.5) \quad w(\bar{x}, \bar{y}) = \bar{u}(\bar{x}, \bar{y}) - \bar{u}(\bar{x}, 0) - \bar{u}(0, \bar{y}) + \bar{u}(0, 0),$$

and since, by hypothesis 1),  $f_1, f_2, P_1$  and  $P_2 \in C^1$ , we obtain

$$(6.6) \quad \begin{aligned} w(\bar{x}, 0) &= w_{\bar{x}}(\bar{x}, 0) = w_{\bar{x}\bar{x}}(\bar{x}, 0) = 0, \\ w(0, \bar{y}) &= w_{\bar{y}}(0, \bar{y}) = w_{\bar{y}\bar{y}}(0, \bar{y}) = 0. \end{aligned}$$

Thus we may reduce the problem to that of finding a function  $w = w(\bar{x}, \bar{y})$  which vanishes on the coordinate axes in a vicinity of the origin and satisfies there the transformed form of equation (1.1),



$$(6.7) \quad F(\bar{x}, \bar{y}; [w + \varepsilon]; [w + \varepsilon], \bar{x}, [w + \varepsilon], \bar{y}; [w + \varepsilon], \bar{x}, \\ [w + \varepsilon], \bar{y}, [w + \varepsilon], \bar{y})$$

where

$$(6.8) \quad g(\bar{x}, \bar{y}) = \bar{u}(\bar{x}, 0) + \bar{u}(0, \bar{y}) - \bar{u}(0, 0).$$

The function  $g$  is known from the prescribed initial data.

For simplicity, we return to our original notation and state the problem in this way:

To determine the function  $u = u(x, y)$  satisfying equation (1.1) and the initial conditions

$$u(x, 0) = u(0, y) = 0,$$

where, in the notation above,

$$u_0 = p_0 = q_0 = r_0 = t_0 = 0$$

and

$$(6.9) \quad F(0, 0; 0; 0, 0; 0, s_0, 0) = 0.$$

By hypothesis 2), there exists a unique value  $s_0$  satisfying (6.9).

The characteristic base curves and, a fortiori, the hyperbolic condition are invariant under the transformation (6.1). (See R. COLETT - D. HILLER [17] p. 304.) Moreover, the substitution  $w = \bar{u} - g$  also preserves the invariance of the equation for the characteristic base curves and the hyperbolic condition as is easily seen by differentiation of (6.7). Hence, by hypothesis 2), we have the hyperbolic condition



$$(6.10) \quad F_{s_0}^2 - 4 F_{r_0} F_{t_0} > 0,$$

while the equation for the characteristic base curve directions at the origin is

$$(6.11) \quad F_{r_0} dy^2 - F_{s_0} dx dy + F_{t_0} dx^2 = 0.$$

Hypothesis 2) implies that the coordinate axes must be characteristic base curves. By (6.11) and (6.10) this in turn implies that  $F_{r_0} = F_{t_0} = 0$ , and hence that  $F_{s_0} \neq 0$ . But now the Implicit Function Theorem tells us that in the neighborhood of the point  $(0,0; 0; 0,0; 0, s_0, 0)$  equation (1.1) can be solved explicitly in the form

$$(6.12) \quad s = f(x,y; u; p,q; r,t).$$

Under hypothesis 3) or 3)', the function  $f \in C'''$  or  $C''$ , respectively, in a neighborhood of this point. Moreover,

$$(6.13) \quad f_{r_0} = f_{t_0} = 0 \quad \text{and} \quad s_0 = f_0$$

while the hyperbolic condition becomes at the origin

$$(6.14) \quad 1 - 4 f_{r_0} f_{t_0} = 1 > 0$$

and the equation for the characteristic base curves becomes

$$(6.15) \quad f_r dy^2 + dx dy + f_t dx^2 = 0.$$

Let us assume that we have a particular integral surface  $J: u = u(x,y)$  passing through the coordinate axes in a neighborhood of the origin, with  $u(x,y) \in C'''$  in this neighborhood..

We define



$$(6.16) \quad \delta = \sqrt{1 - 4 f_r f_t}, \quad \rho = \frac{-2f_t}{1+\delta}, \quad \sigma = \frac{-2f_r}{1+\delta},$$

$\delta$ ,  $\rho$  and  $\sigma$  being of class  $C''$  by hypothesis 3), or of class  $C'$  by hypothesis 3)', in the variables  $x, y; u; p, q; r, t$  in a neighborhood of the point  $(0, 0; 0; 0, 0; 0, 0)$ . The two one-parameter families of characteristic base curves corresponding to  $J$  are thus represented by the equations

$$(6.17) \quad y_\lambda = \rho x_\lambda$$

$$(6.18) \quad x_\mu = \sigma y_\mu.$$

Note that  $\delta_0 = 1$ , hence  $\delta > 0$  in a neighborhood of the origin, while  $\rho_0 = \sigma_0 = 0$ .

As in Chapter V, to obtain the system of characteristic equations, we transform to the characteristic base curves as coordinates and consider what relations must be satisfied along these coordinates for any given integral surface  $J$ . In particular, we specialize the transformation

$$(6.19) \quad \begin{cases} x = x(\lambda, \mu) \\ y = y(\lambda, \mu) \end{cases}$$

by stipulating that a line  $\lambda = \text{constant}$  shall have  $x$ -intercept  $(\lambda, 0)$  and a line  $\mu = \text{constant}$  shall have  $y$ -intercept  $(0, \mu)$ , with  $\lambda = \mu = 0$  at the origin. The Jacobian of this transformation, evaluated at the origin, has the value

$$(6.20) \quad x_{\lambda_0} y_{\mu_0} - y_{\lambda_0} x_{\mu_0} = x_{\lambda_0} y_{\mu_0} (1 - \rho_0 \sigma_0) = x_{\lambda_0} y_{\mu_0} \neq 0,$$

since if  $x_{\lambda_0} = 0$ , then  $y_{\lambda_0} = 0$  by (6.17), contradicting the requirement that  $\dot{x}^2 + \dot{y}^2 \neq 0$  along any characteristic curve.





Similarly, if  $y_{\mu_0} = 0$ , then  $x_{\mu_0} = 0$  by (6.18) and the contradiction is again obtained.

Paralleling our development in Chapter V, we see that certain determinants must vanish at each point of the integral surface  $J$ , yielding equations which must be satisfied along the characteristics on  $J$ . We have

$$(6.21) \quad \begin{vmatrix} f_r & -[f]_x & f_t \\ x_\lambda & r_\lambda & 0 \\ 0 & s_\lambda & y_\lambda \end{vmatrix} = f_r r_\lambda y_\lambda + f_t s_\lambda x_\lambda + [f]_x x_\lambda y_\lambda = 0$$

where

$$(6.22) \quad [f]_x = f_p r + f_q f + f_u p + f_x.$$

also

$$(6.23) \quad \begin{vmatrix} f_r & -[f]_y & f_t \\ x_\lambda & s_\lambda & 0 \\ 0 & t_\lambda & y_\lambda \end{vmatrix} = f_r s_\lambda y_\lambda + f_t t_\lambda x_\lambda + [f]_y x_\lambda y_\lambda = 0$$

where

$$(6.24) \quad [f]_y = f_p f + f_q t + f_u q + f_y.$$

Eliminating  $s_\lambda$  between (6.21) and (6.23), we obtain

$$(6.25) \quad f_r^2 r_\lambda y_\lambda^2 - f_t^2 t_\lambda x_\lambda^2 + [f]_x f_r x_\lambda y_\lambda^2 -$$

$$[f]_y f_t x_\lambda^2 y_\lambda = 0.$$

By virtue of definitions (6.16) and equation (5.17), we may write (6.25) as

$$(6.26) \quad f_t^2 x_\lambda^2 \cdot H(\lambda, \mu) = 0$$



where

$$(6.27) \quad H(\lambda, \mu) = r_\lambda \sigma^2 - t_\lambda + \frac{2}{1+\delta} \left\{ [f]_y - \sigma [f]_x \right\} x_\lambda.$$

But, as shown above,  $x_\lambda \neq 0$  along any of the characteristic base curves of  $J$  of the corresponding family, hence (6.26) reduces to

$$(6.28) \quad f_t^2 \cdot H(\lambda, \mu) = 0.$$

Where  $f_t = 0$  we have immediately that  $H(\lambda, \mu) = 0$ . Suppose at a particular point of  $J$  that  $f_t = 0$ . Then by (6.16) and (6.17), we have there that

$$(6.29) \quad \rho = 0, \quad \delta = 1, \quad \sigma = -f_r \quad \text{and} \quad y_\lambda = 0.$$

Thus, at this point, by (6.24),

$$(6.30) \quad t_\lambda = s_y x_\lambda = (f_r r_y + [f]_y) x_\lambda;$$

while by (6.22),

$$(6.31) \quad r_\lambda \sigma^2 = f_r^2 r_x x_\lambda = f_r^2 (s_\lambda - [f]_x x_\lambda).$$

Substituting (6.30) and (6.31) into (6.27), we obtain that where  $f_t = 0$  on  $J$ ,  $H(\lambda, \mu) = 0$ . Hence by (6.28),  $H(\lambda, \mu) = 0$  everywhere on  $J$  and represents a relation which must be satisfied along each characteristic of the corresponding family on  $J$ .

For the other family of characteristics on  $J$ , we have determinants corresponding to (6.21) and (6.22) which vanish at each point of  $J$ . Eliminating  $s_\mu$  between these and arguing in a fashion analogous to that above, we arrive at the following rela-



tion which must be satisfied along each characteristic of this family on  $J$ :

$$(6.32) \quad K(\lambda, \mu) = \rho^2 t_\mu - r_\mu + \frac{2}{1+\delta} \left\{ [f]_x - \rho [f]_y \right\} y_\mu = 0.$$

We are now in a position to prescribe the necessary and sufficient conditions that the coordinate axes be characteristics for any integral surface of

$$(6.12) \quad s = f(x, y; u; p, q; r, t)$$

passing through them.

Suppose that, in a neighborhood of the origin, the coordinate axes are characteristic to some integral surface  $J: u = u(x, y)$  of (6.12) passing through them. Then in terms of the characteristic base curves to  $J$  as coordinates, defined by the coordinate transformation (6.19), we have for  $\mu = 0$ :

$$x = \lambda, \quad y = 0, \quad u = p = r = 0, \quad q = Q(\lambda), \quad t = T(\lambda),$$

where, from (6.12),

$$(6.33) \quad Q'(\lambda) = f(\lambda, 0; 0; 0, Q(\lambda); 0, T(\lambda)),$$

while, from  $H(\lambda, \mu) = 0$ , since  $\rho = f_t = 0$ ,  $\delta = 1$  and

$$\sigma = -f_p,$$

$$(6.34) \quad T'(\lambda) = \left\{ [f]_y + f_r [f]_x \right\} (\lambda, 0; 0; 0, Q(\lambda); 0, T(\lambda)).$$

Moreover,

$$(6.35) \quad Q(0) = T(0) = 0.$$



Equations (6.33) and (6.34) represent a system of first order ordinary differential equations under one point boundary conditions (6.35). The right hand sides of the equations of this system are of class  $C''$  under hypothesis 3), or of class  $C'$  under hypothesis 3)', in the variables  $\lambda$ ,  $Q$  and  $T$ . Hence, in either case, the functions  $Q$  and  $T$  are uniquely determined in a neighborhood of  $\lambda = 0$ . If the  $x$  axis is characteristic, these functions must also satisfy

$$(6.36) \quad f_t(\lambda, 0; 0; 0, Q(\lambda); 0, T(\lambda)) = 0.$$

Similarly, for  $\lambda = 0$ :

$$x = 0, y = \mu, u = q = t = 0, p = P(\mu), r = R(\mu),$$

where, from (6.12),

$$(6.37) \quad P'(\mu) = f(0, \mu; 0; P(\mu), 0; R(\mu), 0),$$

while, from  $K(\lambda, \mu) = 0$ , since  $\sigma = f_x = 0$ ,  $\delta = 1$  and  $\rho = -f_t$ ,

$$(6.38) \quad R'(\mu) = \left\{ [f]_x + f_t [f]_y \right\} (0, \mu; 0; P(\mu), 0; R(\mu), 0).$$

Moreover,

$$(6.39) \quad P(0) = T(0) = 0.$$

Hence, if the  $y$  axis is characteristic, the functions  $P$  and  $R$ , uniquely determined by (6.37), (6.38), and (6.39), must also satisfy

$$(6.40) \quad f_x(0, \mu; 0; P(\mu), 0; R(\mu), 0) = 0.$$





To recapitulate, the necessary condition that the  $x$  axis be a characteristic of some integral surface is that the functions  $Q$  and  $T$  determined from the system (6.33) and (6.34), under boundary conditions (6.35), shall satisfy (6.36) for each  $\lambda$  in a neighborhood of  $\lambda = 0$ . The necessary condition that the  $y$  axis be a characteristic of some integral surface is that the functions  $P$  and  $R$  determined from the system (6.37) and (6.38), under boundary conditions (6.39), shall satisfy (6.40) for each  $\mu$  in a neighborhood of  $\mu = 0$ .

We now show that these conditions are also sufficient, i.e. given in the vicinity of the origin, an integral surface  $J: u = u(x, y)$  of (6.12) passing through the coordinate axes, with

$$(6.41) \quad P_1(y) = u_x(0, y), \quad P_1(y) = u_{xx}(0, y), \quad Q_1(x) = u_y(x, 0), \\ \text{and } T_1(x) = u_{xy}(x, 0),$$

we show that the requirement

$$(6.40)' \quad f_P(0, y; 0; P_1(y), 0; R_1(y), 0) = 0$$

is sufficient that the  $y$  axis be a characteristic on  $J$ .

The argument needed to show that the requirement

$$(6.36)' \quad f_t(x, 0; 0; 0, Q_1(x); 0, T_1(x)) = 0$$

is sufficient in order that the  $x$  axis be a characteristic on  $J$  is analogous to the following and will not be given here.

We need show only that under requirement (6.40)',  $P_1(y) = P(y)$  and  $R_1(y) = R(y)$ , where  $P(y)$  and  $R(y)$  are those functions obtained



previously under the assumption that the y-axis was "intrinsically characteristic".

Now  $P_1(0) = R_1(0) = 0$  since  $u(x,0) = 0$ . Moreover, since  $u$  satisfies

$$(6.12) \quad s = f(x, y; u; p, q; r, t),$$

for  $x = 0$ ,

$$(6.37)' \quad P_1'(y) = f(0, y; 0; P_1(y), 0; R_1(y), 0).$$

Now, recalling that  $u \in C'''$ ,

$$(6.42) \quad s_x = f_r r_x + f_t t_x + [f]_x,$$

$$(6.43) \quad s_y = f_r r_y + f_t t_y + [f]_y.$$

Since  $u(0, y) = 0$ , we obtain  $t_y(0, y) = 0$ . Writing  $r_x(0, y) = w(y)$  and substituting (6.43) into (6.42) with  $x = 0$ , we obtain

$$(6.44) \quad \begin{aligned} s_x(0, y) &= r_y(0, y) \\ &= f_r w(y) + f_t f_r r_y + [f]_x + f_t [f]_y \end{aligned}$$

But,  $u(0, y) = u_y(0, y) = u_{yy}(0, y) = 0$ , hence by (6.44),

$$(6.38)' \quad R_1'(y) = \left[ \frac{1}{1 - f_r f_t} \left\{ [f]_x + f_t [f]_y + f_r w(y) \right\} \right] (0, y; 0; P_1(y), 0; R_1(y), 0).$$

Now equation (6.37)' is precisely the same as (6.37), while requirement (6.40)' is sufficient to reduce (6.38)' to (6.38). But this implies that  $P_1(y) = P(y)$  and  $R_1(y) = R(y)$  since the solution of the system of ordinary differential equations in question is unique.



In the foregoing arguments we have developed a procedure for determining whether or not the initial curves are "intrinsically characteristic". By transformation (6.1) and substitution (6.5), we reduce the initial curves  $\Gamma_1$  and  $\Gamma_2$  to the coordinate axes. If now  $s_0$  can be uniquely determined from (6.9) we may verify the hyperbolic condition and obtain the characteristic directions at the origin. If these directions coincide with the coordinate axes, then equation (1.1) can be solved explicitly for (6.12). From this, the system (6.37) and (6.38) under boundary condition (6.39) can, in principle at least, be solved for functions  $P$  and  $R$ . Finally if  $P$  and  $R$  satisfy (6.40) then the  $y$  axis is characteristic to any integral surface of the problem, i.e. "intrinsically characteristic". Likewise, from the system (6.33) and (6.34) under boundary condition (6.35), the functions  $Q$  and  $T$  can be determined. If these satisfy (6.36) then the  $x$  axis is "intrinsically characteristic". Note that  $P$ ,  $R$ ,  $Q$  and  $T$  are evidently of class  $C^1$ .

Having given hypothesis 2) a precise meaning along with a procedure for determining whether or not it is verified for a given problem, we continue with the proof under the assumption that hypothesis 2) is verified.

From equations (6.17), (6.18), (6.27), (6.32) and the strip conditions we obtain the following system of characteristic equations, which must be satisfied along the characteristics on any integral surface  $J$ :



$$\begin{aligned}
 (6.45) \quad & \left. \begin{aligned}
 \varphi_1 &= y_\lambda - \rho x_\lambda = 0 \\
 \varphi_2 &= r_\lambda \sigma^2 - t_\lambda + \frac{2}{1+\delta} \left\{ [f]_y - \sigma [f]_x \right\} x_\lambda = 0 \\
 \varphi_3 &= u_\lambda - p x_\lambda - q y_\lambda = 0 \\
 \varphi_4 &= p_\lambda - r x_\lambda - f y_\lambda = 0 \\
 \varphi_5 &= q_\lambda - f x_\lambda - t y_\lambda = 0
 \end{aligned} \right\} \text{System A} \\
 & \left. \begin{aligned}
 \psi_1 &= x_\mu - \sigma y_\mu = 0 \\
 \psi_2 &= r_\mu - \rho^2 t_\mu - \frac{2}{1+\delta} \left\{ [f]_x - \rho [f]_y \right\} y_\mu = 0 \\
 \psi_3 &= u_\mu - p x_\mu - q y_\mu = 0 \\
 \psi_4 &= p_\mu - r x_\mu - f y_\mu = 0 \\
 \psi_5 &= q_\mu - f x_\mu - t y_\mu = 0
 \end{aligned} \right\} \text{System B}
 \end{aligned}$$

We observe that System A of (6.45) is of canonical hyperbolic form in  $x, y; u; p, q; r, t$  as functions of  $\lambda$  and  $\mu$ . Since for Theorem 9,  $F \in C'''$ , while for Theorem 9a,  $F \in C''$ , the coefficients of all equations in (6.45) are functions of class  $C''$  for Theorem 9, and of class  $C'$  for Theorem 9a. Moreover, the matrix of coefficients for System A is, after interchange of rows and columns,

$$\begin{aligned}
 (6.46) \quad & \begin{vmatrix}
 -\rho & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 1 & -\sigma & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 * & 0 & \sigma^2 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 0 & * & 1 & -\rho^2 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
 * & * & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
 * & & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
 * & * & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
 \end{vmatrix} \\
 &= (1 - \rho\sigma) (\rho^2 \sigma^2 - 1) = \frac{-\delta^2}{(1+\delta)^3}
 \end{aligned}$$





where the coefficients designated only by asterisks, \*, do not contribute to the value of the determinant. But  $\delta > 0$  everywhere on  $J$  in a neighborhood of the origin, hence the determinant (6.46) does not vanish thereon.

As to the initial conditions, we have, by hypothesis 1) of Theorems 9 and 9a for  $\mu = 0$ ,

$x = \lambda, y = 0, u = p = r = 0, q = Q(\lambda), t = T(\lambda)$ ,  
and for  $\lambda = 0$ ,

$$x = 0, y = \mu, u = q = t = 0, p = P(\mu), r = R(\mu)$$

where  $Q, T$  and  $P, R$  are determined from their respective systems and are of class  $C^1$ . Moreover, for  $\mu = 0$ , by (6.36),  $f_t = 0$ .

Hence  $\rho = 0, \delta = 1$ , and  $\sigma = -f_r$ . This together with  $y_\lambda = r_\lambda = u_\lambda = p_\lambda = 0$  and equation (6.34) prove that

$$(6.47) \quad \varphi_1(\lambda, 0) = \varphi_2(\lambda, 0) = \varphi_3(\lambda, 0) = \varphi_4(\lambda, 0) = \varphi_5(\lambda, 0) = 0$$

for all  $\lambda$  in a neighborhood of  $\lambda = 0$ . Similarly, for  $\lambda = 0$ , by (6.40),  $f_r = 0$ . Hence  $\sigma = 0, \delta = 1$  and  $\rho = -f_t$ . This together with  $x_\mu = t_\mu = u_\mu = q_\mu = 0$  and equation (6.33) prove that

$$(6.48) \quad \psi_1(0, \mu) = \psi_2(0, \mu) = \psi_3(0, \mu) = \psi_4(0, \mu) = \psi_5(0, \mu) = 0$$

for all  $\mu$  in a neighborhood of  $\mu = 0$ . Thus the initial condition requirements of hypothesis 3) of Theorems 6 and 6a are satisfied.

Since the coefficients in (6.45) are of class  $C^1$  for Theorem 6, hypotheses 1) and 2) of Theorem 6 are satisfied. Also, since the coefficients in (6.47) are of class  $C^1$  for Theorem 9a, the



common hypothesis 1) of Theorems 6 and 6a is satisfied, but hypothesis 2) of Theorem 6, a hypothesis which does not appear in Theorem 6a, is not satisfied. Thus if we now show that any solution of the canonical hyperbolic system, System A of (6.45), with the given characteristic initial conditions is also a solution of the corresponding problem for the equation

$$(6.12) \quad s = f(x, y; u; p, q; r, t)$$

with the same initial conditions, then Theorem 9 is an immediate consequence of Theorem 6 and Theorem 9a is an immediate consequence of Theorem 6a.

As in the Cauchy problem of Chapter 5, we show that for each solution of System A under the given characteristic initial conditions that System B is likewise satisfied. Note that here we cannot assume that  $p, q, r$  and  $t$  are derivatives of  $u$ ; this is a matter of proof. Recalling from Theorems 6 and 6a that the functions of the solution of System A,  $x, y, u, p, q, r, t$  are of class  $C^1$  and that  $f \in C^{1,1}$  under hypothesis 3) of Theorem 9, or  $f \in C^1$  under hypothesis 3)' of Theorem 9a, we obtain by differentiation and consideration of (6.45) that

$$(6.49) \quad \begin{aligned} \psi_{3,\lambda} - \psi_{2,\mu} &= p_\mu x_\lambda + q_\mu y_\lambda - p_\lambda x_\mu - q_\lambda y_\mu \\ &= \psi_4 x_\lambda + \psi_5 y_\lambda - \psi_4 x_\mu - \psi_5 y_\mu. \end{aligned}$$

Moreover, since  $\psi_3 = \psi_4 = \psi_5 = 0$ ,

$$(6.50) \quad \begin{aligned} f_\lambda &= f_r r_\lambda + f_t t_\lambda + f_p p_\lambda + f_q q_\lambda + f_u u_\lambda + f_x x_\lambda + f_y y_\lambda \\ &= f_r r_\lambda + f_t t_\lambda + [f]_x x_\lambda + [f]_y y_\lambda, \end{aligned}$$

while



$$\begin{aligned}
 (6.51) \quad f_{\mu} &= f_r r_{\mu} + f_t t_{\mu} + f_p p_{\mu} + f_q q_{\mu} + f_u u_{\mu} + f_x x_{\mu} + f_y y_{\mu} \\
 &= f_r r_{\mu} + f_t t_{\mu} + [f]_x x_{\mu} + [f]_y y_{\mu} \\
 &\quad + f_p \psi_4 + f_q \psi_5 + f_u \psi_3.
 \end{aligned}$$

Thus by (6.45), (6.50) and (6.51),

$$\begin{aligned}
 (6.52) \quad \psi_{4,\lambda} - \varphi_{4,\mu} &= r_{\mu} x_{\lambda} + f_{\mu} y_{\lambda} - r_{\lambda} x_{\mu} - f_{\lambda} y_{\mu} \\
 &= y_{\lambda} \{ f_p \psi_4 + f_q \psi_5 + f_u \psi_3 \} \\
 &\quad + \left( \frac{1+\delta}{2} \right) x_{\lambda} \psi_2 - \left( \frac{1+\delta}{2} \right) r_{y\mu} \varphi_2.
 \end{aligned}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned}
 (6.53) \quad \psi_{5,\lambda} - \varphi_{5,\mu} &= t_{\mu} x_{\lambda} + t_{\mu} y_{\lambda} - t_{\lambda} x_{\mu} - t_{\lambda} y_{\mu} \\
 &= x_{\lambda} \{ f_p \psi_4 + f_q \psi_5 + f_u \psi_3 \} \\
 &\quad - \left( \frac{1+\delta}{2} \right) \sigma x_{\lambda} \psi_2 + \left( \frac{1+\delta}{2} \right) y_{\mu} \varphi_2.
 \end{aligned}$$

Taking into account the fact that System A is satisfied, we reduce (6.49), (6.52) and (6.53) to the system

$$\begin{aligned}
 \psi_{3,\lambda} &= \psi_4 x_{\lambda} + \psi_5 y_{\lambda} \\
 (6.54) \quad \psi_{4,\lambda} &= y_{\lambda} \{ f_u \psi_3 + f_p \psi_4 + f_q \psi_5 \} \\
 \psi_{5,\lambda} &= x_{\lambda} \{ f_u \psi_3 + f_p \psi_4 + f_q \psi_5 \}
 \end{aligned}$$

For fixed  $\mu$ , (6.54) represents a system of linear, homogeneous, first order ordinary differential equations for the functions  $\psi_3$ ,  $\psi_4$  and  $\psi_5$  of the variable  $\lambda$ . Moreover, by (6.48),



the homogeneous one point boundary conditions

$$\psi_3(0, \mu) = \psi_4(0, \mu) = \psi_5(0, \mu) = 0$$

must be satisfied. Hence, the unique solution for the system (6.54) is

$$\psi_3 = \psi_4 = \psi_5 = 0$$

wherever the solution of system A is defined.

Consider the linear algebraic system,

$$(6.55) \quad \begin{cases} \psi_3 = u_\lambda - px_\lambda - qy_\lambda = 0 \\ \psi_3 = u_\mu - px_\mu - qy_\mu = 0. \end{cases}$$

The determinant of this system, by (6.20), does not vanish in a neighborhood of the origin, hence in this neighborhood there exists a unique solution for  $p$  and  $q$ . Since  $p = u_x$  and  $q = u_y$  satisfy (6.55) they are the solution of (6.55)

Similarly, from

$$(6.56) \quad \begin{cases} \psi_4 = p_\lambda - r x_\lambda - f y_\lambda \\ \psi_4 = p_\mu - r x_\mu - f y_\mu, \end{cases}$$

we obtain  $r = u_{xx}$  and  $f = u_{xy}$ ,

while from

$$(6.57) \quad \begin{cases} \psi_5 = q_\lambda - f x_\lambda - t y_\lambda \\ \psi_5 = q_\mu - f x_\mu - t y_\mu, \end{cases}$$

we obtain the additional information that  $t = u_{yy}$ . Consequently, any solution of System A under the given characteristic initial conditions satisfies the equation





$$u_{xy} = f(x, y; u; u_x, u_y; u_{xx}, u_{yy})$$

in a neighborhood of the point  $(0,0; 0; 0,0; 0,0)$  and the proof of Theorems 9 and 9a is now complete.

Let us designate the problem considered in Theorems 9 and 9a as Problem I. By virtue of the exposition of Chapter IV and this present chapter, we may associate to this problem a particular Problem II, of the type considered in Theorems 3 and 3a of Chapter II. As we have shown, any solution of I is a solution of II, and, conversely, any solution of II is a solution of I. Where for I,  $P \in C'''$ , Theorem 3 tells us that the solution of the related Problem II is unique. Hence, as is stated in Theorem 9, the solution for I is likewise unique. If, however, for Problem I,  $P \in C''$  only, then Theorem 3a tells us merely that the related Problem II has at least one solution. Moreover, Example 1, Chapter II, tells us that this solution cannot be shown to be unique.

We must not conclude merely from the above that for  $P \in C''$  the solution to Problem I cannot be shown to be unique. We can say, though, that any proof for uniqueness, if such can be made at all, will apparently have to be based upon arguments independent of those of this paper.



## Chapter VII

## The Mixed Boundary Value Problem

$$\text{for } u_{xy} = f(x, y; u; u_x, u_y).$$

In the terminology of J. HADAMARD [11], appendix II, p. 456, the mixed hyperbolic boundary value problem is one in which we prescribe the values of the integral surface along two lines issuing from a point, one of which is characteristic to the surface in question, while the other is nowhere characteristic.

J. HADAMARD, in the reference above, and E. PICARD [7], p. 135, prove the existence of a unique solution to the linear equation

$$(7.1) \quad u_{xy} = a u_x + b u_y + c u,$$

$a$ ,  $b$  and  $c$  continuous functions of  $x$  and  $y$  alone, satisfying the initial conditions

$$(7.2) \quad u(x, 0) = u(x, x) = 0.$$

In Theorem 10, below, we extend their conclusions to the equation

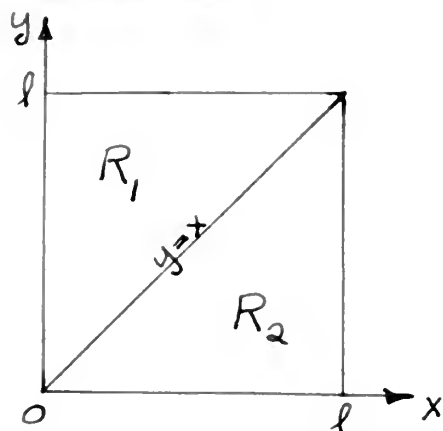
$$(7.3) \quad u_{xy} = f(x, y; u; u_x, u_y)$$

maintaining initial conditions (7.2). The result is well known, but does not appear in the literature in the precise form stated. We require this precise statement because we wish to proceed from Theorem 10 by the methods of Chapters II and III in which we relax the Lipschitz condition on the function  $f$  to require merely



that  $f$  be partially Lipschitzian. Thus we obtain the improved statement of Theorem 10a.

### Theorem 10



$$1) f(x,y; u; p,q) \in C(E), E: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq l \\ -a \leq u \leq a \\ -b \leq p \leq b \\ -b \leq q \leq b \end{cases}$$

2)  $f$  is Lipschitzian on  $E$  (as defined in Theorem 1.)

3)  $M l^2 \leq a, M l \leq b$ , where

$M = \max |f|$  on  $E$

4) There exists one and only one function  $u(x,y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{xy}(x,y) \in C(R)$ , where  $R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq l \end{cases}$ , such that for each

$(x,y) \in R$ , the point  $(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)) \in E$ , and

$$u_{xy}(x,y) = f(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)),$$

$$u(x,0) = u(x,x) = 0 \quad \text{for each } (x,y) \in R.$$

### Proof

This proof is based upon PICARD's variation of the method of successive approximations, [1] p. 359 or [7] p. 117. Here the uniform convergence of the approximating functions to the solution is verified by means of a majorant series. The majorant series used is that obtained from the approximating functions converging uniformly to the solution for the particular linear equation



$$(7.4) \quad w_{xy} = K (w + w_x + w_y)$$

with the same initial conditions.  $K$  is the Lipschitz constant for the function  $f$  of (7.3). PICARD applied this technique to the characteristic initial value problem, obtaining Theorem 1 of Chapter II. He thus obtained the theorem for the characteristic initial value problem for the non-linear equation (7.3) from the theorem for the characteristic initial value problem for the linear equation (7.1).

For the mixed boundary value problem under consideration, a curious situation arises. We do not obtain a majorant series from equation (7.4) under mixed initial conditions. However, we do find that PICARD's majorant series for the characteristic initial value problem serves as well for this problem. Thus Theorem 10 follows not from the theorem for the mixed boundary value problem for the linear equation (7.1) but from the theorem for the characteristic initial value problem for equation (7.1).

It is sufficient, as we shall demonstrate later, to show existence of a unique solution in region  $R_2: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq x \end{cases}$ . Assuming  $(x, y) \in R_2$ , we may express the problem as the integral equation

$$(7.5) \quad u(x, y) = \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\eta.$$

By differentiation,

$$(7.6) \quad u_x(x, y) = \int_0^y f(x, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\eta,$$

and





$$(7.7) \quad u_y(x, y) = \int_y^x f(\xi, y; u; u_x, u_y) d\xi - \int_0^y f(y, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\eta.$$

We form the successive approximations

$$(7.8) \quad \begin{cases} u_1(x, y) = \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; 0; 0, 0) d\eta \\ u_2(x, y) = \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u_1; u_{1,x}, u_{1,y}) d\eta \\ \vdots \\ u_n(x, y) = \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u_{n-1}; u_{n-1,x}, u_{n-1,y}) d\eta \\ \vdots \end{cases}$$

where, by differentiation,

$$(7.9) \quad u_{n,x}(x, y) = \int_0^y f(x, \eta; u_{n-1}; u_{n-1,x}, u_{n-1,y}) d\eta, \\ (n = 1, 2, \dots),$$

$$(7.10) \quad u_{n,y}(x, y) = \int_y^x f(\xi, y; u_{n-1}; u_{n-1,x}, u_{n-1,y}) d\xi \\ - \int_0^y f(y, \eta; u_{n-1}; u_{n-1,x}, u_{n-1,y}) d\eta, \\ (n = 1, 2, \dots).$$

Since the point  $(x, y; 0; 0, 0) \in B$  for  $(x, y) \in R_2$ , by hypothesis 3),

$$\begin{aligned} |u_1(x, y)| &\leq M |x-y| \cdot |y| \leq M \rho^2 \leq a, \\ |u_{1,x}(x, y)| &\leq M |y| \leq M \rho \leq b, \\ |u_{1,y}(x, y)| &\leq M \{|x-y| + |y|\} \\ &= M|x| \leq M \rho \leq b \end{aligned}$$

Thus, by induction, for all  $n$  and for any  $(x, y) \in R_2$

$$(7.11) \quad \begin{cases} |u_n(x, y)| \leq M \rho^2 \leq a, \\ |u_{n,x}(x, y)| \leq M \rho \leq b, \\ |u_{n,y}(x, y)| \leq M \rho \leq b. \end{cases}$$



Our purpose is to show that on  $R_2$

$$(7.12) \quad \{u_n\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u, \quad \{u_{n,x}\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u_x \text{ and } \{u_{n,y}\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u_y$$

such that the function  $u$  and its derivatives satisfy conclusion 4) for  $(x,y) \in R_2$ . To accomplish this we consider the successive approximations

$$(7.13) \quad \begin{aligned} w_1(x,y) &= \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y M d\eta \\ w_2(x,y) &= \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y K(w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}) d\eta \\ &\vdots \\ w_n(x,y) &= \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y K(w_{n-1} + w_{n-1,x} + w_{n-1,y}) d\eta \\ &\vdots \end{aligned}$$

where, by differentiation,

$$(7.14) \quad w_{n,x}(x,y) = \int_0^y K[w_{n-1} + w_{n-1,x} + w_{n-1,y}](x,\eta) d\eta, \quad (n = 1, 2, \dots),$$

$$(7.15) \quad w_{n,y}(x,y) = \int_0^x K[w_{n-1} + w_{n-1,x} + w_{n-1,y}](\xi,y) d\xi, \quad (n = 1, 2, \dots).$$

Here  $M = \max |f|$  on  $R$  while  $K$  is the Lipschitz constant of hypothesis 2).

Now  $w_1(x,y) = Mxy$ , hence  $w_1(x,y) = w_1(y,x)$ . Moreover,  $w_{1,x}(x,y) = My$ ,  $w_{1,y}(x,y) = Mx$ , hence  $w_{1,x}(x,y) = w_{1,y}(y,x)$ .

Let us make the inductive hypothesis that for some fixed positive integer  $n$ ,

$$(7.16) \quad w_n(x,y) = w_n(y,x), \quad w_{n,x}(x,y) = w_{n,y}(y,x).$$



But this implies that

$$(7.17) \quad [w_n + w_{n,x} + w_{n,y}](x,y) = [w_n + w_{n,x} + w_{n,y}](y,x)$$

and thus, by (7.13),

$$w_{n+1}(x,y) = w_{n+1}(y,x).$$

Also, by (7.14) and (7.15), (7.17) implies that

$$\begin{aligned} w_{n+1,x}(x,y) &= \int_0^y K [w_n + w_{n,x} + w_{n,y}](x,\eta) d\eta \\ &= \int_0^y K [w_n + w_{n,x} + w_{n,y}](\xi,x) d\xi \\ &= w_{n+1,y}(y,x). \end{aligned}$$

Hence, by induction, (7.16) holds for  $n = 1, 2, \dots$ .

PICARD, in the references quoted above, shows that

$$(7.18) \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} w_n = w, \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} w_{n,x} = w_x, \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} w_{n,y} = w_y,$$

each uniformly convergent on  $R$ , where the function  $w$  and its derivatives satisfy

$$(7.19) \quad \begin{aligned} w_{xy} &= K(w + w_x + w_y), \\ w(x,0) &= w(0,y) = 0. \end{aligned}$$

We now show that these series are majorant to the series

$$(7.20) \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (u_n - u_{n-1}), \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (u_{n,x} - u_{n-1,x}), \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (u_{n,y} - u_{n-1,y}),$$

respectively, for each  $(x,y) \in R_2$ , (with  $u_0 = 0$ ).

Now, for  $(x,y) \in R_2$ ,

$$|u_1(x,y)| \leq \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; 0; 0,0)| d\eta \leq \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y M d\eta = w_1(x,y)$$

$$|u_{1,x}(x,y)| = \int_0^y |f(x, \eta; 0; 0,0)| d\eta \leq \int_0^y M d\eta = w_{1,x}(x,y)$$



$$\begin{aligned}
|u_{1,y}(x,y)| &\leq \int_y^x |f(\xi, y; 0; 0, 0)| d\xi + \int_0^y |f(y, \eta; 0; 0, 0)| d\eta \\
&\leq \int_y^x M d\xi + \int_0^y M d\eta \\
&= \int_0^x M d\xi = w_{1,y}(x,y).
\end{aligned}$$

Also, abbreviating our notation somewhat,

$$\begin{aligned}
|u_2 - u_1| &\leq \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u_1; u_{1,x}, u_{1,y}) \\
&\quad - f(\xi, \eta; 0; 0, 0)| d\eta \\
&\leq \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y K [|u_1| + |u_{1,x}| + |u_{1,y}|](\xi, \eta) d\eta \\
&\leq \int_0^x d\xi \int_0^y K [w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}](\xi, \eta) d\eta \\
&= w_2,
\end{aligned}$$

$$|u_{2,x} - u_{1,x}| \leq \int_0^y K [w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}](x, \eta) d\eta = w_{2,x}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
|u_{2,y} - u_{1,y}| &\leq \int_y^x K [w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}](\xi, y) d\xi \\
&\quad + \int_0^y K [w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}](y, \eta) d\eta \\
&= \int_y^x K [w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}](\xi, y) d\xi \\
&\quad + \int_0^y K [w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}](\xi, y) d\xi \\
&= \int_0^x K [w_1 + w_{1,x} + w_{1,y}](\xi, y) d\xi \\
&= w_{2,y}.
\end{aligned}$$

Hence, by induction, we obtain for  $n = 1, 2, \dots$

$$\begin{aligned}
|u_n - u_{n-1}| &\leq w_n, \quad |u_{n,x} - u_{n-1,x}| \leq w_{n,x}, \\
(7.21) \quad |u_{n,y} - u_{n-1,y}| &\leq w_{n,y} \quad \text{for each } (x, y) \in R_2.
\end{aligned}$$





Thus the series of (7.18) are majorant to the corresponding series of (7.20). Moreover, the requirements for termwise differentiation of an infinite sum are satisfied since each of the series of (7.20) is now known to be uniformly convergent on  $R_2$ . Hence, for  $(x, y) \in R_2$ ,

$$(7.22) \quad \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (u_n - u_{n-1}) = u \\ \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (u_{n,x} - u_{n-1,x}) = u_x \\ \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (u_{n,y} - u_{n-1,y}) = u_y ; \end{array} \right.$$

or, in other terms, since each of these series telescopes,

$$(7.22)' \quad \{u_n\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u, \quad \{u_{n,x}\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u_x, \quad \{u_{n,y}\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} u_y$$

on  $R_2$ .

We now verify that the function  $u$  and its derivatives  $u_x$  and  $u_y$  satisfy the integralequation statement of the problem (7.5):

$$\begin{aligned} & \left| u(x, y) - \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\eta \right| \\ & \leq |u(x, y) - u_n(x, y)| + \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) \\ (7.23) \quad & \quad - f(\xi, \eta; u_{n-1}; u_{n-1,x}, u_{n-1,y})| d\eta \\ & \leq |u(x, y) - u_n(x, y)| \\ & \quad + \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y K [|u - u_{n-1}| + |u_x - u_{n-1,x}| + |u_y - \\ & \quad u_{n-1,y}|] (\xi, \eta) d\eta \end{aligned}$$



Thus, by (7.22)', given  $\epsilon > 0$ , there exists a positive integer  $N$ , depending on  $\epsilon$  alone, such that  $n > N \Rightarrow$

$$|u(x, y) - \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi, \eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\eta| < \epsilon (1 + 3K^2),$$

for  $(x, y) \in R_2$ . But  $\epsilon$  is arbitrary, hence the integral equation is satisfied.

By (7.11) and (7.22)' we see that for any  $(x, y) \in R_2$ , the point  $(x, y; u(x, y); u_x(x, y), u_y(x, y)) \in B$ . Thus existence of a solution on  $R_2$  is now proved.

To prove uniqueness, let us suppose that  $u_1$  and  $u_2$  are two solutions on  $R_2$ , then

$$\begin{aligned} (7.24) \quad |u_1(x, y) - u_2(x, y)| &\leq \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y |f(\xi, \eta; u_1; u_{1,x}, u_{1,y}) \\ &\quad - f(\xi, \eta; u_2; u_{2,x}, u_{2,y})| d\eta \\ &\leq \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y K[|u_1 - u_2| + |u_{1,x} - u_{2,x}| + |u_{1,y} - u_{2,y}|] \\ &\quad (\xi, \eta) d\eta. \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} (7.25) \quad |u_{1,x}(x, y) - u_{2,x}(x, y)| &\leq \int_0^y |f(x, \eta; u_1; u_{1,x}, u_{1,y}) \\ &\quad - f(x, \eta; u_2; u_{2,x}, u_{2,y})| d\eta \\ &\leq \int_0^y K[|u_1 - u_2| + |u_{1,x} - u_{2,x}| + |u_{1,y} - u_{2,y}|](x, \eta) d\eta. \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} (7.26) \quad |u_{1,y}(x, y) - u_{2,y}(x, y)| &\leq \int_y^x |f(\xi, y; u_1; u_{1,x}, u_{1,y}) \\ &\quad - f(\xi, y; u_2; u_{2,x}, u_{2,y})| d\xi \\ &\quad + \int_0^y |f(y, \eta; u_1; u_{1,x}, u_{1,y}) \\ &\quad - f(y, \eta; u_2; u_{2,x}, u_{2,y})| d\eta. \end{aligned}$$



Let  $\psi(x, y) = [ |u_1 - u_2| + |u_{1,x} - u_{2,x}| + |u_{1,y} - u_{2,y}| ](x, y)$ .

With  $R^* = \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \ell^* \\ 0 \leq y \leq x \end{cases}$ ,  $\ell^* = \min(1, \ell, \frac{1}{6K})$ , we have

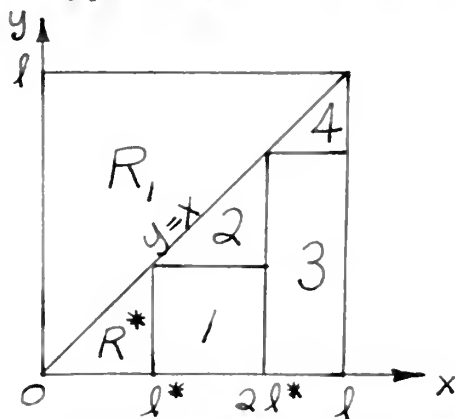
$\psi(x, y) \in C(R^*)$ . Moreover, there exists a point  $(x^*, y^*) \in R^*$  such that  $\psi(x^*, y^*) = \mu$  where  $\mu = \max \psi(x, y)$  on  $R^*$ . But, adding (7.24), (7.25) and (7.26) we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \psi(x, y) &\leq K\mu \{ (x-y)y + y + (x-y) + y \} \\ &\leq K\mu (xy + x + y) \\ &\leq K\mu \cdot \frac{3}{6K} = \frac{\mu}{2}, \end{aligned}$$

hence  $\psi(x^*, y^*) = \mu \leq \frac{\mu}{2}$ , which implies  $\mu = 0$  and thus

$$(7.27) \quad u_1(x, y) = u_2(x, y)$$

for  $(x, y) \in R^*$



To extend this uniqueness proof to the domain  $R_2$ , we subdivide  $R_2$  as shown in the diagram. We know that the solution  $u$  is unique on  $R^*$  and hence determines  $u(\ell^*, y)$  for  $0 \leq y \leq \ell^*$ .

But  $u(x, 0) = 0$  by hypothesis, consequently, by Theorem 1, Chapter II, we have a unique solution  $u_1$  to the characteristic initial value problem on sub-region 1. Since  $u_x(\ell^*, 0) = u_{1,x}(\ell^*, 0)$ , we have from the differential equation that  $u_x(\ell^*, y) = u_{1,x}(\ell^*, y)$  for  $0 \leq y \leq \ell^*$ , i.e.  $u$  and  $u_1$  have a first order contact across the line  $x = \ell^*$  and hence together represent a unique solution for the region  $R^* + 1$ . Analogously, by the preceding "in the



small" uniqueness proof for the mixed boundary value problem, the solution  $u_2$  is unique in sub-region 2 and has a first order contact with  $u_1$  across the line  $y = x$ . We continue obtaining unique solutions for characteristic initial value and mixed initial value problems, alternatively as indicated by the numerical sequence in the diagram. These solutions have first order contacts with each other across the characteristics forming the boundaries of the sub-regions, hence we have extended our uniqueness proof from the region  $R_*$  to the region  $R_2$ .

Having thus determined the existence of a unique solution satisfying conclusion 4) throughout  $R_2$ , we now consider the Cauchy problem for region  $R_1$  with the same equation and hypotheses thereon and with the initial conditions

$$(7.28) \begin{cases} u^0(x, x) = 0, \quad u_x^0(x, x) = u_{x+}(x, x), \text{ and} \\ u_y^0(x, x) = u_{y-}(x, x) \quad \text{for } x \in [0, 1]. \end{cases}$$

In (7.28)  $u_{x+}$  and  $u_{y-}$  are the right-hand  $x$  and lower  $y$  derivatives, respectively, determined at each point of the line  $y = x$  by the known solution  $u$  on  $R_2$ . By Theorem 4, Chapter III, there exists a unique solution  $u^0$  to this Cauchy problem for each  $(x, y) \in R_1$ , hence

$$u_1(x, y) = \begin{cases} u^0(x, y) & \text{for } (x, y) \in R_1 \\ u(x, y) & \text{for } (x, y) \in R_2 \end{cases}$$

is the unique solution valid for each  $(x, y) \in R = R_1 + R_2$ , since  $u^0$  and  $u$  have, by prescription, a first order contact across the line  $y = x$ . This completes the proof of Theorem 10.





Relaxing only hypothesis 2) of Theorem 10, we obtain the following improvement:

Theorem 10a

1)

2)'  $f$  is partially Lipschitzian on  $B$  (as defined in Theorem 1a.)

3)

$\Rightarrow$  4)' There exists at least one function, etc. (as in Theorem 10.)

Outline of the proof:

As in the proof of Theorem 10, we may, without loss, prove existence on  $R_2$  only. For, prescribing Cauchy conditions on  $y = x$  as before, we may extend the solution from  $R_2$  to  $R_1$ , by use of Theorem 4a, Chapter III.

In this proof we follow very closely the derivation of Theorem 1a, Chapter II; hence only the differences between the two proofs will be noted.

WEIERSTRASS' theorem tells us that there exists a sequence of polynomials,  $\{g_\lambda\}$ , converging uniformly to  $f$  on  $B$ . We extend the  $g_\lambda$ , ( $\lambda = 1, 2, \dots$ ), and  $f$  from  $B$  to

$$B': \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq 1 \\ 0 \leq y \leq 1 \\ -\infty < u < \infty \\ -\infty < p < \infty \\ -\infty < q < \infty \end{cases}$$

by definitions analogous to (2.1). There

exists a constant  $L > 0$  such that  $|g_\lambda| \leq L$  in  $B'$  and for all  $\lambda$ . More-



over, the  $g_\lambda$  are "fully" Lipschitzian in  $B'$ . Hence by Theorem 10, (with  $a \rightarrow \infty$ ,  $b \rightarrow \infty$ ), for each  $g_\lambda$  there exists a unique function  $u_\lambda$  such that for  $(x, y) \in R_2$

$$(7.29) \quad u_\lambda = \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y g_\lambda(\xi, \eta; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\eta,$$

and thus

$$(7.30) \quad u_{\lambda, x} = \int_0^y g_\lambda(x, \eta; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\eta,$$

$$(7.31) \quad u_{\lambda, y} = \int_y^x g_\lambda(\xi, y; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\xi - \int_0^y g_\lambda(y, \eta; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\eta.$$

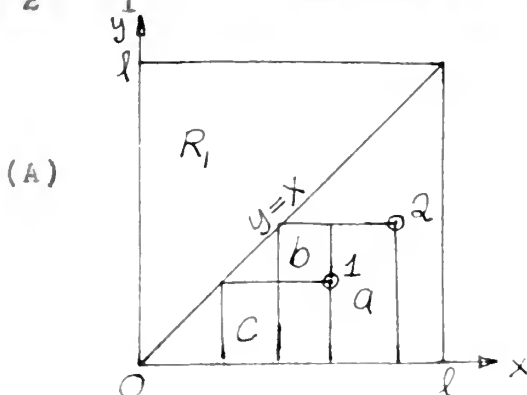
For  $(x, y) \in R_2$ , by (7.29), (7.30) and (7.31),

$$(7.32) \quad \left. \begin{aligned} |u_\lambda(x, y)| &\leq L \ell^2 \\ |u_{\lambda, x}(x, y)| &\leq L \ell \\ |u_{\lambda, y}(x, y)| &\leq L \{ (x-y) + y \} \\ &\leq L \ell \end{aligned} \right\} (\lambda = 1, 2, \dots)$$

i.e. the sequences  $\{u_\lambda\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda, x}\}$  and  $\{u_{\lambda, y}\}$  are uniformly bounded on  $R_2$ .

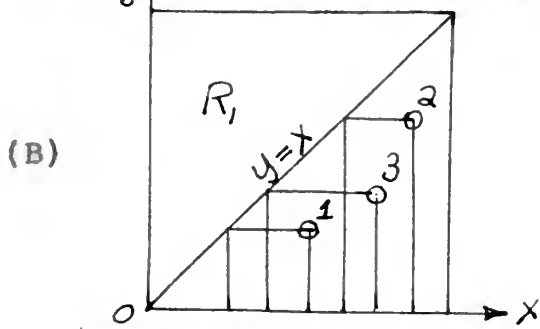
Given two points,  $(x_1, y_1) \in R_2$ ,  $(x_2, y_2) \in R_2$ , we may assume, without loss, that  $x_1 \leq x_2$ . Then, if  $y_1 \leq y_2$ , let us assume that  $y_2 \leq x_1$ . Then by integrating over the regions a, b and c in

diagram (A) we obtain





$$(7.33) \quad |u_{\lambda}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda}(x_1, y_1)| \leq L\{\ell(x_2 - x_1) + 2\ell(y_2 - y_1)\}.$$

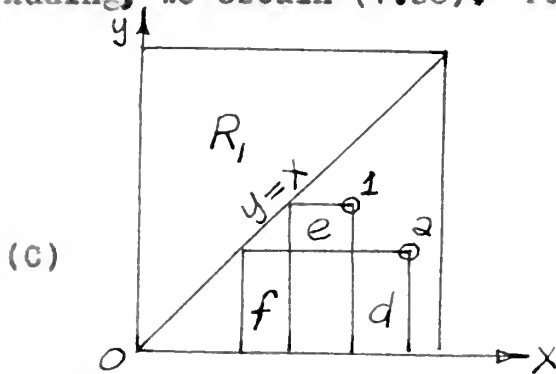


If  $y_2 \geq x_1$  we may always choose a point  $(x_3, y_3)$  with  $y_2 < x_3 < x_2$  and  $y_1 < y_3 < x_1$  (as in diagram (B)). Then, as above,

$$|u_{\lambda}(x_2, y_2) - u_{\lambda}(x_3, y_3)| \leq L\{\ell(x_2 - x_3) + 2\ell(y_2 - y_3)\}$$

$$|u_{\lambda}(x_3, y_3) - u_{\lambda}(x_1, y_1)| \leq L\{\ell(x_3 - x_1) + 2\ell(y_3 - y_1)\}.$$

Adding, we obtain (7.33). Further if  $y_1 \geq y_2$ , we have the case



shown in diagram (C). Here by integrating over the regions d, e and f we again obtain (7.33). Hence the sequence

$\{u_{\lambda}\}$  is equicontinuous on  $R_2$ .

Now, for  $(x, y_2) \in R_2$ ,  $(x, y_1) \in R_2$ , by (7.30)

$$(7.34) \quad |u_{\lambda, x}(x, y_2) - u_{\lambda, x}(x, y_1)| \leq L|y_2 - y_1|.$$

Likewise, for  $(x_2, y) \in R_2$ ,  $(x_1, y) \in R_2$ , by (7.31)

$$(7.35) \quad |u_{\lambda, y}(x_2, y) - u_{\lambda, y}(x_1, y)| \leq L|x_2 - x_1|.$$

Moreover, by precisely the same argument as that used to prove Lemma 2 of Chapter II, given  $\mu > 0$ ,  $\zeta > 0$ , there exist  $\delta > 0$ ,

$N > 0$ , depending only on  $\mu$  and  $\zeta$ , respectively, such that for

$(x_2, y) \in R_2$ ,  $(x_1, y) \in R_2$ ,

$$\lambda > N \text{ and } |x_2 - x_1| < \delta$$



$$\Rightarrow$$

$$(7.36) \quad |u_{\lambda,x}(x_2,y) - u_{\lambda,x}(x_1,y)| \\ \leq K \int_0^y |u_{\lambda,x}(x_2,\eta) - u_{\lambda,x}(x_1,\eta)| d\eta + \mu + \zeta.$$

Thus by (7.34), (7.36) and Lemma 1, Chapter II, the sequence

$\{u_{\lambda,x}\}$  is equicontinuous on  $R_2$ .

We need the following refinement of the argument in order to show that the sequence  $\{u_{\lambda,y}\}$  is equicontinuous on  $R_2$ :

Let us suppose  $(x,y_2) \in R_2$ ,  $(x,y_1) \in R_2$ . Without loss, we may assume that  $x \geq y_2 \geq y_1$ . Then

$$(7.37) \quad u_{\lambda,y}(x,y_2) - u_{\lambda,y}(x,y_1) \\ = \int_{y_2}^x [g_{\lambda}(\xi,y_2; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) - g_{\lambda}(\xi,y_1; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y})] d\xi \\ - \int_{y_1}^{y_2} g_{\lambda}(\xi,y_1; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) d\xi \\ - \int_0^{y_1} [g_{\lambda}(y_2,\eta; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) - g_{\lambda}(y_1,\eta; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y})] d\eta \\ - \int_{y_1}^{y_2} g_{\lambda}(y_2,\eta; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) d\eta$$

We have just proved that the sequences  $\{u_{\lambda}\}$  and  $\{u_{\lambda,x}\}$  are equicontinuous on  $R_2$ . The sequence  $\{g_{\lambda}\}$  is certainly equicontinuous on  $E'$ . Hence, considering (7.35), given  $\mu > 0$ , there exists  $\delta > 0$ , depending upon  $\mu$  alone, such that  $|y_2 - y_1| < \delta$

$$\Rightarrow$$

$$(7.38) \quad \left| \int_0^{y_1} [g_{\lambda}(y_2,\eta; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y}) - g_{\lambda}(y_1,\eta; u_{\lambda}; u_{\lambda,x}, u_{\lambda,y})] d\eta \right| < \mu,$$

$$(7.39) \quad \left| \int_{y_2}^x [g_{\lambda}(\xi,y_2; u_{\lambda}(\xi,y_2); u_{\lambda,x}(\xi,y_2), \underline{u_{\lambda,y}(\xi,y_2)}) - g_{\lambda}(\xi,y_1; u_{\lambda}(\xi,y_1); u_{\lambda,x}(\xi,y_1), \underline{u_{\lambda,y}(\xi,y_2)})] d\xi \right| < \mu,$$





for  $\lambda = 1, 2, \dots$ .

Also, since  $\{g_\lambda\} \xrightarrow{\text{unif}} f$  on  $B'$ , given  $\zeta > 0$ , there exists  $N > 0$ , depending upon  $\zeta$  alone, such that  $\lambda > N$

$\Rightarrow$

$$(7.40) \left| \int_{y_2}^x [g_\lambda - f](\xi, y_1; u_\lambda(\xi, y_1); u_{\lambda, x}(\xi, y_1), \underline{u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, y_2)}) d\xi \right| < \zeta,$$

$$\left| \int_{y_2}^x [f - g_\lambda](\xi, y_1; u_\lambda(\xi, y_1); u_{\lambda, x}(\xi, y_1), \underline{u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, y_1)}) d\xi \right| < \zeta.$$

By hypothesis 2)',

$$(7.41) \left| \int_{y_2}^x [f(\xi, y_1; u_\lambda(\xi, y_1); u_{\lambda, x}(\xi, y_1), \underline{u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, y_2)}) - f(\xi, y_1; u_\lambda(\xi, y_1); u_{\lambda, x}(\xi, y_1), \underline{u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, y_1)})] d\xi \right| \\ \leq \int_{y_2}^x K |u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, y_2) - u_{\lambda, y}(\xi, y_1)| d\xi.$$

Moreover, since  $|g_\lambda| \leq L$ , ( $\lambda = 1, 2, \dots$ ),

$$(7.42) \left| \int_{y_1}^{y_2} g_\lambda(\xi, y_1; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\xi \right| \leq L |y_2 - y_1| \\ \left| \int_{y_1}^{y_2} g_\lambda(y_2, \eta; u_\lambda; u_{\lambda, x}, u_{\lambda, y}) d\eta \right| \leq L |y_2 - y_1|.$$

Thus by equations (7.37) through (7.41), given  $\mu > 0$ ,  $\zeta > 0$ , there exists  $\delta > 0$ ,  $N > 0$ , depending only upon  $\mu$  and  $\zeta$ , respectively, such that  $|y_2 - y_1| < \delta$  and  $\lambda > N$



$\Rightarrow$

$$(7.43) \quad |u_{\lambda,y}(x,y_2) - u_{\lambda,y}(x,y_1)| \\ \leq K \int_{y_2}^x |u_{\lambda,y}(\xi,y_2) - u_{\lambda,y}(\xi,y_1)| d\xi \\ + 4\mu + 2\zeta.$$

By Lemma 1, Chapter II, inequalities (7.35) and (7.43) imply that the sequence  $\{u_{\lambda,y}\}$  is equicontinuous on  $R_2$ .

From this point on the proof is practically identical with that for Theorem 1a. Since the sequences  $\{u_\lambda\}$ ,  $\{u_{\lambda,x}\}$  and  $\{u_{\lambda,y}\}$  are uniformly bounded and equicontinuous on  $R_2$ , we may apply ARZELA's theorem to obtain a subsequence of each, uniformly convergent on  $R_2$ . Hence, as for Theorem 1a, by successive extractions of subsequences we obtain a subsequence  $\{u_\lambda^*\}$  of  $\{u_\lambda\}$  converging uniformly on  $R_2$  to a solution  $u$  of the integral equation

$$u(x,y) = \int_y^x d\xi \int_0^y f(\xi,\eta; u; u_x, u_y) d\eta,$$

and such that for  $(x,y) \in R_2$

$(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)) \in B$ . The proof for Theorem 10a is now complete.

Following E. PICARD [7] p. 135 and p. 139, we show that the general statement of the mixed boundary conditions, (i.e. where  $u$  is prescribed along two intersecting curves, one characteristic and the other nowhere characteristic), can be reduced to the statement found in Theorems 10 and 10a, (i.e. where  $u(x,0) = u(x,x) = 0$  for  $x \in [0, \ell]$ ).

First, let us suppose that we prescribe



$$(7.44) \quad \begin{cases} u(x,0) = \varphi(x) \\ u(x,x) = \psi(x) \end{cases}$$

for  $x \in [0, \ell]$ ,  $\varphi(x)$  and  $\psi(x) \in C^1[0, \ell]$  and  $\varphi(0) = \psi(0)$ .

Consider

$$(7.45) \quad w(x,y) = \varphi(x) + \psi(y) - \varphi(y).$$

We have  $w_{xy} = 0$  on  $R$  while

$$(7.46) \quad \begin{cases} w(x,0) = \varphi(x) \\ w(x,x) = \psi(x) \end{cases}$$

for  $x \in [0, \ell]$ . Hence, instead of the problem with non-homogeneous boundary conditions (7.44), by setting

$$(7.47) \quad v = u - w$$

we may consider the problem

$$(7.48) \quad \begin{cases} v_{xy} = f(x,y; v+w; v_x + w_x, v_y + w_y) \\ v(x,0) = 0 \\ v(x,x) = 0, \end{cases}$$

a problem of the type covered by Theorems 10 and 10a.

Second, suppose we prescribe  $u$  along the characteristic  $y = 0$  and the nowhere characteristic curve  $y = F(x)$ , where  $F(x) \in C^1([0, \ell_1])$ ,  $F'(x) \neq 0$  for  $x \in [0, \ell_1]$  and  $F(0) = 0$ .

The coordinate transformation

$$(7.49) \quad \begin{cases} \bar{x} = F(x) \\ \bar{y} = y \end{cases}$$

reduces the curve  $y = F(x)$  to the diagonal  $\bar{y} = \bar{x}$  since the inverse  $F^{-1}$  exists and is of class  $C^1$  on  $[0, F(\ell_1)]$ . Moreover,

$$(7.50) \quad u_{xy} = F'(x) u_{\bar{x}\bar{y}}.$$



Since  $F'(x) \neq 0$ , the form of the differential equation remains unchanged and we reduce the problem to one with initial conditions in the form (7.44).

Thus the general statement of the mixed boundary value problem for

$$(7.3) \quad u_{xy} = f(x, y; u; u_x, u_y)$$

can be reduced to the form treated in Theorems 10 and 10a. We note that whatever continuity and Lipschitz conditions are satisfied by (7.3) before transformation (7.49) and substitution (7.47) are satisfied as well after these operations are performed.





## CHAPTER VIII

EXISTENCE THEOREMS BASED ON THE  
CONCEPT OF UPPER AND LOWER BOUNDING FUNCTIONS

For the ordinary differential equation  $y' = f(x, y)$  with  $y(x_0) = y_0$ , O. PERRON [18], assuming  $f$  merely continuous, gives an existence proof that is entirely independent of the classical proofs and contains them as special cases. He bases his proof on the concept of under and over functions, defining  $\varphi(x)$  to be an under function if  $\varphi(x_0) = y_0$  and

$$(8.1) \quad D_{\pm} \varphi(x) < f(x, \varphi(x))$$

and defining  $\psi(x)$  to be an over function if  $\psi(x_0) = y_0$  and

$$(8.2) \quad D_{\pm} \psi(x) > f(x, \psi(x)).$$

The solutions are found to lie between the upper limit function  $g$  of the set of underfunctions and the lower limit function  $G$  of the set of overfunctions,  $g$  and  $G$  themselves being solutions.

M. WILDER [4] shows that PERRON's proof will not carry over directly to apply to a system.

$$(8.3) \quad y_i' = f_i(x, y_1, \dots, y_n) \quad , \quad (i = 1, \dots, n).$$

However, he is able to extend the classical theorem, obtaining a statement which is similar to that of PERRON and which reduces to the direct analogue of PERRON's theorem in the particular case where the functions  $f_i$  are monotonically increasing in the arguments  $y_1, \dots, y_n$ .



In this chapter we return to the characteristic initial value problem for

$$(8.4) \quad u_{xy} = f(x, y; u; u_x, u_y).$$

We obtain results similar to those of MULLER above. In the following Theorems 11 and 11a we improve the statements of Theorems 1 and 1a, Chapter I, by the introduction of upper and lower bounding functions  $\Omega$  and  $\omega$ .

Theorem 11 (11a)

$$1) \quad f(x, y; u; p, q) \in C(T), \quad T: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq l \\ \omega(x, y) \leq u \leq \Omega(x, y) \\ \omega_x(x, y) \leq p \leq \Omega_x(x, y) \\ \omega_y(x, y) \leq q \leq \Omega_y(x, y) \end{cases}$$

2) (2)')  $f$  is Lipschitzian (partially Lipschitzian) on  $T$  (as defined in Theorems 1 and 1a).

3) The functions  $\omega(x, y)$  and  $\Omega(x, y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $P: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq l \end{cases}$  with  $\omega_{xy}(x, y)$  and  $\Omega_{xy}(x, y) \in C(R)$ . Moreover,

$$\omega(x, 0) = \Omega(x, 0) = 0 \quad \text{for } x \in [0, l],$$

$$\omega(0, y) = \Omega(0, y) = 0 \quad \text{for } y \in [0, l],$$

and, for each  $(x, y) \in R$ ,

$$(8.5) \quad \omega_{xy}(x, y) \leq \min_{S(x, y)} [f(x, y; u; p, q)],$$

$$(8.6) \quad \Omega_{xy}(x, y) \geq \max_{S(x, y)} [f(x, y; u; p, q)]$$

where



$$(8.7) \quad S(x,y): \begin{cases} x = x \\ y = y \\ \omega(x,y) \leq u \leq \Omega(x,y) \\ \omega_x(x,y) \leq p \leq \Omega_x(x,y) \\ \omega_y(x,y) \leq q \leq \Omega_y(x,y) \end{cases}$$

$\Rightarrow$  4) (4)' There exists one and only one (at least one) function  $u(x,y) \in C^1(R)$ ,  $u_{xy} \in C(R)$  such that for each  $(x,y) \in R$  the point  $(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y) u_y(x,y)) \in T$ , and

$$u_{xy}(x,y) = f(x,y; u(x,y); u_x(x,y), u_y(x,y)),$$

$u(x,0) = u(0,y) = 0$  for each  $(x,y) \in R$ .

### Proof

We extend the domain of definition of the function  $f$  over  $T$  to  $P'$ :

$$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq l \\ -\infty < u < \infty \\ -\infty < p < \infty \\ -\infty < q < \infty \end{array} \right. \quad \text{by defining } f(x,y; u; p,q)$$

$= f(x,y; \bar{u}; \bar{p}, \bar{q})$ , where

$$\begin{aligned} \bar{u} &= u \text{ if } \omega(x,y) \leq u \leq \Omega(x,y), \quad \bar{p}=p \text{ if } \omega_x(x,y) \leq p \leq \Omega_x(x,y), \\ (2.8) \quad \bar{u} &= \omega(x,y) \text{ if } u < \omega(x,y) \quad \bar{p} = \omega_x(x,y) \text{ if } p < \omega_x(x,y) \\ \bar{u} &= \Omega(x,y) \text{ if } \Omega(x,y) < u \quad \bar{p} = \Omega_x(x,y) \text{ if } \Omega_x(x,y) < p \\ \text{and} \quad \bar{q} &= q \text{ if } \omega_y(x,y) \leq q \leq \Omega_y(x,y) \\ \bar{q} &= \omega_y(x,y) \text{ if } q < \omega_y(x,y) \\ \bar{q} &= \Omega_y(x,y) \text{ if } \Omega_y(x,y) < q. \end{aligned}$$

By definition (2.8),  $f$  is uniformly continuous and uniformly bounded in  $P'$ . Moreover, by hypothesis 2) (2)' and (2.8)  $f$  satisfies a Lipschitz (partial Lipschitz) condition in  $P'$ .



Hence, by Theorem 1 (1a) Chapter II, there exists one and only one (at least one) function satisfying conclusion 4)(4)') except that for  $(x,y) \in R$  we are assured only that the point  $(x,y;u(x,y);u_x(x,y),u_y(x,y)) \in B'$ . To complete the proof we must show that this point actually lies in  $T$ ; i.e. we must show that for each  $(x,y) \in R$ ,

$$(8.9) \quad \begin{cases} \omega(x,y) \leq u(x,y) \leq \Omega(x,y) \\ \omega_x(x,y) \leq u_x(x,y) \leq \Omega_x(x,y) \\ \omega_y(x,y) \leq u_y(x,y) \leq \Omega_y(x,y) . \end{cases}$$

To accomplish this, we first prove the following lemma:

Lemma 3    i)  $\omega_{xy}(x,y) \leq u_{xy}(x,y)$     for all  $(x,y) \in R$   
 $\Rightarrow$      $\omega(x,y) \leq u(x,y)$     "  
           $\omega_x(x,y) \leq u_x(x,y)$     "  
           $\omega_y(x,y) \leq u_y(x,y)$     " ,

ii)  $\Omega_{xy}(x,y) \geq u_{xy}(x,y)$     for all  $(x,y) \in R$   
 $\Rightarrow$      $\Omega(x,y) \geq u(x,y)$     "  
           $\Omega_x(x,y) \geq u_x(x,y)$     "  
           $\Omega_y(x,y) \geq u_y(x,y)$     " .

Proof: For i),

$$\begin{aligned} \omega(x,y) &= \int_0^x dx \int_0^y \omega_{xy} dy \leq \int_0^x dx \int_0^y u_{xy} dy = u(x,y) \\ \omega_x(x,y) &= \int_0^y \omega_{xy} dy \leq \int_0^y u_{xy} dy = u_x(x,y) \\ \omega_y(x,y) &= \int_0^x \omega_{xy} dx \leq \int_0^x u_{xy} dx = u_y(x,y) . \end{aligned}$$

The proof for ii) is analogous.





To prove (3.9) it only remains to verify that hypothesis 1) and ii) of Lemma 3 are satisfied by  $u$ . By hypothesis 3) and definition (3.8), for each  $(x, y) \in R$ ,

$$\begin{aligned}\omega_{xy}(x, y) &\leq \min_{S(x, y)} [f(x, y; u; p, q)] \\ &\leq f(x, y; u(x, y); u_x(x, y), u_y(x, y)) \\ &= u_{xy}(x, y)\end{aligned}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned}\Omega_{xy}(x, y) &\geq \max_{S(x, y)} [f(x, y; u; p, q)] \\ &\geq f(x, y; u(x, y); u_x(x, y), u_y(x, y)) \\ &= u_{xy}(x, y).\end{aligned}$$

Thus, by Lemma 3, requirement (3.9) is satisfied for each  $(x, y) \in R$  and the proof of Theorems 11 and 11a is complete.

It is evident upon inspection of Theorems 11 and 11a that if, instead of homogeneous initial conditions, we prescribe

$$u(x, 0) = U(x) \quad \text{with } U(x) \in C^1([0, l]),$$

$$u(0, y) = V(y) \quad \text{with } V(y) \in C^1([0, l]),$$

where  $U(0) = V(0)$ , then we must require

$$\omega(x, 0) = \Omega(x, 0) = U(x),$$

$$\omega(0, y) = \Omega(0, y) = V(y).$$

The proof then goes through as before.

The following example is an illustration of Theorem 11:

#### Example 4

or the problem



$$(8.10) \quad u_{xy} = (2^{1/m} - u_x)^{1/m+1}, \quad u(x,0) = u(0,y) = 0,$$

we may readily verify that

$$(8.11) \quad \omega(x,y) = \left(\frac{1}{m+1}\right)^{1/m+1} \cdot 2^{1/m(m+1)} xy$$

and

$$(8.12) \quad \Omega(x,y) = 2^{1/m(m+1)} xy$$

satisfy the hypotheses of Theorem 11 for all  $x \geq 0$  and

$$0 \leq y \leq C_m^* = \frac{m}{m+1} 2^{1/m+1}$$

In Chapter II we obtained the exact solution

$$(2.42) \quad u(x,y) = x \left\{ 2^{1/m} - \left[ \frac{m}{m+1} (C_m - y) \right]^{m+1/m} \right\}$$

where

$$(2.43) \quad C_m = \frac{m+1}{m} 2^{1/m+1}$$

is a branch point of the solution. We observe that as  $m$  increases indefinitely  $\omega$  and  $\Omega$  approach  $u$  from below and above, respectively, while  $C_m^*$  approaches  $C_m$  from below.

We see from this example that it is possible to obtain approximate solutions, with known limits of error, and to locate singularities in the actual solution by use of Theorem 11, provided that suitable functions  $\omega$  and  $\Omega$  can be obtained. For problems where explicit solutions cannot be obtained in "closed form", the procedure is to alter the right-hand side of the equation

$$u_{xy} = f(x,y; u; u_x, u_y)$$

so that an explicit solution of the altered equation can be ob-



tained satisfying the boundary conditions. This may lead to functions  $\omega$  and  $\Omega$  satisfying the hypotheses of Theorem 11. (See W. M. WHYBURN [12] and [20].) The motivation for equations (8.11) and (8.12) of Example 4 is now evident.

When we consider the possibility of applying, as explained below, the PERRON method using under and over functions to the characteristic initial value problem under consideration, we find the situation much the same as that in the case of a system of first order ordinary differential equations. We arrive at the unsatisfactory state of affairs wherein there is no assurance that the under functions remain below the over functions throughout the entire region on which a solution is known to exist. In fact, we shall presently give an example where an under function exceeds an over function within the domain of existence of a solution.

Recalling inequalities (8.1) and (8.2), we may express the application of the PERRON method as follows: We require both the under and over functions to satisfy the given characteristic initial conditions and to be continuously differentiable and to possess a mixed second derivative at each point of the domain  $R: \begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq l \\ 0 \leq y \leq l \end{cases}$ . We further stipulate that each under function,  $\varphi$ , shall satisfy

$$(8.13) \quad \varphi_{xy}(x,y) < f(x,y; \varphi(x,y); \varphi_x(x,y), \varphi_y(x,y)),$$

and that each over function,  $\psi$ , shall satisfy

$$(8.14) \quad \psi_{xy}(x,y) > f(x,y; \psi(x,y); \psi_x(x,y), \psi_y(x,y))$$

for each  $(x,y) \in R$ .



Analogous arguments to those used by PERRON for the ordinary differential equation  $y' = f(x, y)$  lead to the inequalities

$$\begin{aligned}\varphi_x(0, y) &< \psi_x(0, y) & \text{for } 0 < y \leq l, \\ \varphi_y(x, 0) &< \psi_y(x, 0) & \text{for } 0 < x \leq l,\end{aligned}$$

for any under function  $\varphi$  and any over function  $\psi$ . These inequalities, together with the requirement that  $\varphi$  and  $\psi$  satisfy the characteristic initial data on the positive  $x$  and  $y$  axes, insure that  $\psi > \varphi$  in a sufficiently small "L" shaped strip in the first quadrant adjacent to the initial characteristics. Unfortunately, this is inadequate as the following example demonstrates.

#### Example 5

Consider the problem

$$(8.15) \quad u_{xy} = C, \quad u(x, 0) = u(0, y) = 0.$$

This problem has the unique solution  $u \equiv 0$  throughout the finite plane. Let

$$(8.16) \quad \begin{cases} \psi_{xy} = Ax - By^2 + C \\ \varphi_{xy} = -D, \end{cases}$$

where  $A$ ,  $B$ ,  $C$  and  $D$  are positive constants. By integration in (8.16) we may obtain functions  $\psi$  and  $\varphi$  satisfying the initial conditions of (8.15). Obviously,  $\varphi$  is an under function for all  $(x, y)$ . Moreover,  $\psi_{xy} > 0$  for all  $(x, y)$  lying in the portion of the first quadrant below the parabolic arc

$$y = +\sqrt{\frac{A}{B}}x + \frac{C}{B};$$





and hence  $\psi$  meets the requirements for an over function on a domain  $R_\ell$ :  $\begin{cases} 0 \leq x \leq \ell \\ 0 \leq y \leq \sqrt{\frac{C}{E}} \end{cases}$  where  $\ell$  is arbitrarily large but finite.

Defining  $h = \psi - \varphi$  we have

$$h_{xy}(x,y) = Ax - By^2 + C + D.$$

Since  $h(x,0) = h(0,y) = 0$ , we obtain by integration

$$h(x,y) = \frac{A}{2} x^2 y - \frac{B}{2} x^2 y^2 + (C+D) xy.$$

We note that  $h > 0$  in that portion of the first quadrant below the hyperbola branch

$$y = \frac{A}{B} + \frac{2(C+D)}{Ex}$$

while  $h < 0$  above this branch. From the diagram it is evident

that if we require

$$\frac{A}{B} < \sqrt{\frac{C}{E}}$$

then there exists a positive constant  $\ell$  such that within the corresponding domain  $R_\ell$  we have a

subregion  $R^*$  on which  $\varphi > \psi$ . Hence the 'ERRON' method is not directly applicable to this class of problems.

Returning to Theorems 11 and 11a, we observe that if, for fixed  $(x,y)$ ,  $f$  is a monotonically increasing function for the arguments  $u$ ,  $p$  and  $q$ , then

$$\begin{aligned} f(x,y; \omega(x,y); \omega_x(x,y), \omega_y(x,y)) \\ = \min_{u,p,q} [f(x,y; u; p,q)], \end{aligned}$$

and

$$f(x,y; \Omega(x,y); \Omega_x(x,y), \Omega_y(x,y)) = \max_{u,p,q} [f(x,y; u; p,q)].$$



In this case we may alter hypothesis 3) to require merely that

$$\begin{aligned}\omega_{xy}(x,y) &\leq f(x,y; \omega(x,y); \omega_x(x,y), \omega_y(x,y)) \\ \Omega_{xy}(x,y) &\geq f(x,y; \Omega(x,y); \Omega_x(x,y), \Omega_y(x,y))\end{aligned}$$

for each  $(x,y) \in R$ . This is the direct analogue to PERSON's theorem (see [18]) and corresponds to the previously mentioned result of MULLER for a system (8.3).

We close this chapter with the remark that Theorems 11 and 11a can be extended immediately in two ways. First, the method is directly applicable to the Cauchy problem. We require the functions  $\omega$  and  $\Omega$  to satisfy the Cauchy initial data and observe that the proof of Lemma 3 is essentially unchanged. Second, the method extends to apply to a system

$$u_{i,xy} = f_i(x,y; u_j; u_{j,x}, u_{j,y}), \quad (i = 1, \dots, n)$$

for both characteristic and Cauchy initial value prescriptions. The modifications in the hypotheses and proof for Theorems 11 and 11a are obvious.



## BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. E. PICARD, "Sur les méthodes d'approximations successives dans la théorie des équations différentielles," Leçons sur la théorie générale des surfaces, G. DARBOUX, vol. IV, Note I. (Paris 1896).
2. E. KAMKE, Differentialgleichungen reeller Funktionen (Leipzig 1930).
3. W. FUCHS - A. POINCARÉ, Encyklopädie der mathematischen Wissenschaften, vol. II, C. 9c. pp. 1137-1187.
4. W. MULLER, "Über das Fundamentaltheorem in der Theorie der gewöhnlichen Differentialgleichungen," Mathematische Zeitschrift, vol. 26 (1927), pp. 611-615.
5. T. H. GRONALL, "Note on the derivatives with respect to a parameter of the solutions of a system of differential equations," Annals of Mathematics, ser. 2, vol. 20 (1914-15), p. 293.
6. J. COCHET, Cours d'analyse, vol. I (Paris 1893).
7. E. PICARD, Leçons sur les équations aux dérivées partielles (Paris 1907).



8. P. GOURSAT, "Sur un problème relatif à la théorie des équations, etc." (Second Mémoire), Annales de la Faculté de Toulouse, ser. 2, vol. 6 (1904), pp. 117-144.
9. E. E. LEVI, "Sopra un teorema di esistenza per le equazioni alle derivate parziali del secondo ordine," Annali di Matematica, ser. 3, vol. 18 (1911), pp. 287-333.
10. H. LEWY, "Ueber das Anfangswertproblem einer hyperbolischen nichtlinearen partiellen Differentialgleichungen zweiter Ordnung mit zwei unabhängigen Veränderlichen," Mathematische Annalen, vol. 98 (1926), pp. 173-191.
11. J. HADAMARD, Le problème de Cauchy (Paris 1932).
12. E. CINQUINI-CINQUINI, "Intorno ad un sistema di equazioni alle derivate parziali del primo ordine," Rendiconti del Reale Istituto Lombardo, ser. 3, vol. 76 (1942-1946), pp. 177-184.
13. E. CINQUINI-CINQUINI, "Il problema di Goursat per le equazioni del tipo iperbolico con lineari," Annali di Matematica, ser. 4, vol. 51 (1948), pp. 199-229.





14. C. NICCOLETTI, "Sull'estensione dei metodi di Picard e di Riemann ad una classe di equazioni a derivate parziali," Atti della Reale Accademia di Napoli, ser. 2, vol. 2, no. 2 (1936).
15. A. WINTNER, "On the exact value of the bound for the regularity of solutions of ordinary differential equations," American Journal of Mathematics, vol. 57, (1935), pp. 539-540.
16. G. PUEINI, "Alcuni nuovi problemi, che si presentano nella teoria delle equazioni alle derivate parziali," Atti della Reale Accademia di Torino, vol. 40 (1905), pp. 616-631.
17. R. COURANT-D. HILBERT, Methoden der mathematischen Physik, vol. II (Berlin 1937).
18. O. PERRON, "Ein neuer Existenzbeweis für die Integrale der Differentialgleichung  $y' = f(x, y)$ ," Mathematische Annalen, vol. 76 (1916), pp. 471-484.
19. E. H. WHITTAKER, "Existence theorems for ordinary differential equations," Publications of the University of California at Los Angeles in Mathematical and Physical Sciences, vol. 1, no. 2 (1935) pp. 115-134.



DUPLICATE CARD

74913

Thesis 13691

L45 Leehey

c.2 On the existence of not necessarily unique solutions of the classical hyperbolic boundary value problems for non-linear second order partial differential equations in two independent variables.

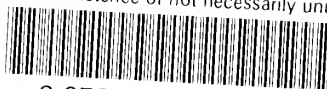
Thesis 13691

L45 Leehey

c.2 On the existence of not necessarily unique solutions of the classical hyperbolic boundary value problems for non-linear second order partial differential equations in two independent variables.

thesL45

On the existence of not necessarily uniq



3 2768 002 12024 8

DUDLEY KNOX LIBRARY